

ENGLISH-RUSSIAN  
GRAMMAR  
OR  
PRINCIPLES

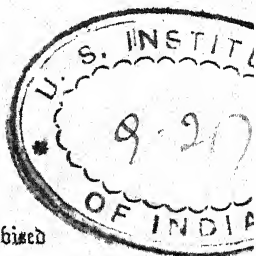
OF THE  
RUSSIAN LANGUAGE

FOR THE USE OF THE ENGLISH

with synoptical Tables for the Declensions and Conjugations, graduated  
Themes or Exercises for the application of the grammatical Rules,  
the correct Construction of these Exercises and the  
Accentuation of all the Russian words

BY

CH. PH. REIFF



*Fourth Edition carefully revised*

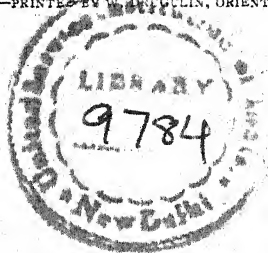
PARIS  
MAISONNEUVE AND Co.

25, QUAI VOLTAIRE, 25

1883

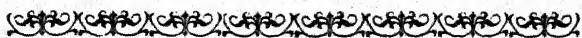
9784

LEIPZIG.—PRINTED BY W. ORFELIN, ORIENTAL AND OLD STYLE PRINTER.



V





## AUTHOR'S PREFACE

### TO THE THIRD EDITION

THE first edition of this Grammar was published at St-Petersburg in 1821, in French, under the title of *Grammaire russe à l'usage des étrangers qui désirent connaître à fond les principes de cette langue*. Up to that period all the elementary books, relating to the study of the Russian language, had been formed on the model of the Latin, which, without any sufficient reason, had been considered the type, according to which all other tongues must be regulated. Since that time the works of the Russian grammarians GRETSCH and VOSTOKOF, the philological Researches of PAYSKY on the formation of the Russian language and the Essay on the comparative Grammar of the Russian language by DAVYDOF, and other works on the same subject, have solved many grammatical difficulties and definitely fixed the principles of the language.

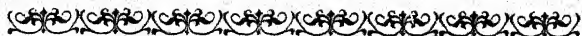
The above works I have carefully consulted in writing the new edition of my *Russian Grammar*

*for the use of strangers.* This edition, completely remodelled, consists of two parts. The first is the Grammar properly so called, in which I have endeavoured to give the rules with a clearness and precision which may render their retention by the memory easy. The second part consists of *Themes* or graduated *Exercises* on each particular rule, where I have placed the Russian words below the English, to serve as vocabulary. The *solution* or *correct construction* of these Exercises will be found at the end of the Grammar.

In order to render the work as extensively useful as possible to foreigners, I have published it simultaneously in three languages, French, English and German. Philologists who may wish to see the subject treated more in detail, can consult my French translation of the Russian Grammar of Mr GRETSCH, under the title of *Grammaire raisonnée de la Langue russe, précédée d'une Introduction sur l'histoire de cet idiome, de son alphabet et de sa Grammaire*, and published at St-Petersburg in 1829.

CH. R.

Carlsruhe, September 1862.



PUBLISHER'S NOTE  
TO THE FOURTH EDITION

**I**N the Fourth Edition of the English-Russian Grammar of the late CH. REIFF, which we now place before those who wish to acquire, by an easy way, a thorough knowledge of the principles of the Russian language, no changes and alterations have been made. There was no sufficient reason of modifying and remoulding a work, the practical character and admirable arrangement of which have been appreciated by more than one competent judge. The book thus being on the whole and in substance left in its original shape, particular attention could be given to the correctness of the edition both regarding typographical errors and the justness of language.—Great pains have also been taken to render the entrance of the study of Russian more accessive by adopting a phonetic method for the transcription of Russian words in English; in which regard the First Part of the grammar has undergone an entire renovation.

Mr. CHAMIZER-LENOIR, a linguist well-known by his deserving exertions in this province, has committed himself to the task; and this scholar did his best in preparing the work for the press, and in carefully revising the sheets as they passed through the same.

We hope that this handy and neat new edition of a book, which, in spite of some scientific shortcomings, "*has done and still can do real service*", will find the indulgence and patronage of the Public.

We feel at last much indebted to the Oriental Printing-Office of W. DRUGULIN for the excellent getting up and carrying through of this volume.

M. & Co.

# RUSSIAN GRAMMAR

## PART FIRST

### LEXICOLOGY.

- I.—THIS *Russian Grammar* is divided into four Division. parts, viz:
- I. *Lexicology* (словопроизведе́ние), or words considered as sounds of the human voice and as the elements of speech.
  - II. *Syntax* (словосочине́ние), or agreement and construction of words in sentences.
  - III. *Orthography* (правописа́ние), or the proper use of letters to represent words.
  - IV. *Prosody* (слоγοударе́ние), or *Orthoepey* (праворѣ́че), i. e. the manner of uttering words with regard to their accentuation.

Sounds  
or Letters.

2.—It being the especial province of this science to explain every thing concerning the knowledge of words, it considers these first of all as mere sounds, and afterwards as the elements of speech. In respect then to mere sounds, words are composed of *letters* (бѣквы); and a collection of these letters or signs representing the particular sounds of which the words of a language are composed, is called *Alphabet* (азбука).

Alphabet.

3.—The Russian Alphabet now in use contains 36 letters, the roman and italic *types* of which, as used in printing, also the *caligraphic characters* or hand-writing, with their modern and ancient *appellation*, and their corresponding *value* of sound, are represented in the following table.

The Russian Alphabet is borrowed from the ecclesiastical Slavonic, which besides contains the following eight letters:

Ѕ Ѹ Ѡ ѡ Ѣ Ѥ Ѧ ѧ

called      зѣло, укъ, отъ, юсъ, о, я, кси, пси for which now  
are substituted з, у, от, ю, о, я, кс, пс.

The letter Ѣ has hitherto not been comprised among the number of the letters of the Alphabet; for which reason it is placed at the end of it.—Russian printers have for some time now pretty generally substituted the small capital т for the common и, and this т we have made use of, both in this Grammar and in our Dictionary.

## RUSSIAN ALPHABET.

Types.		Caligraphic characters.		Appellation.		Value.	
<i>roman.</i>	<i>italic.</i>	<i>Running-hand.</i>	<i>Round-hand.</i>	<i>ancient.</i>	<i>modern.</i>	<i>Proper sound.</i>	<i>Accidental sound.</i>
1. А а	<i>А а</i>	<i>А а</i>	<i>А а</i>	азъ	а	а	е о
2. Б б	<i>Б б</i>	<i>Б б</i>	<i>Б б</i>	бѣки	бе	б	р
3. В в	<i>В в</i>	<i>В в</i>	<i>В в</i>	вѣди	ве	в	ф
4. Г г	<i>Г г</i>	<i>Г г</i>	<i>Г г</i>	глаголь	ге	г, gh; k, h, kh, v	
5. Д д	<i>Д д</i>	<i>Д д</i>	<i>Д д</i>	добро	де	д	т
6. Е е	<i>Е е</i>	<i>Е е</i>	<i>Е е</i>	есть	е	уа, а (in yate, gate)	уо, о (in yoke, no)
7. Ж ж	<i>Ж ж</i>	<i>Ж ж</i>	<i>Ж ж</i>	живѣте	же	zsh	sh
8. З з	<i>З з</i>	<i>З з</i>	<i>З з</i>	земля	зе	з	s
9. И и	<i>И и</i>	<i>И и</i>	<i>И и</i>	иже	и	ее, i (in pin)	уе
10. І і	<i>І і</i>	<i>І і</i>	<i>І і</i>	і (десятеричное)		ее, i (in pin)	
11. К к	<i>К к</i>	<i>К к</i>	<i>К к</i>	како	ка	к	gh, kh
12. Л л	<i>Л л</i>	<i>Л л</i>	<i>Л л</i>	люди	эль	l, ll	
13. М м	<i>М м</i>	<i>М м</i>	<i>М м</i>	мыслѣте	эмъ	m	
14. Н н	<i>Н н</i>	<i>Н н</i>	<i>Н н</i>	нашъ	энъ	n	
15. О о	<i>О о</i>	<i>О о</i>	<i>О о</i>	онъ	о	ō	a (in far)
16. П п	<i>П п</i>	<i>П п</i>	<i>П п</i>	покой	пе	p	
17. Р р	<i>Р р</i>	<i>Р р</i>	<i>Р р</i>	рцы	эръ	r	
18. С с	<i>С с</i>	<i>С с</i>	<i>С с</i>	слово	эсъ	s, ss	z

Types.		Caligraphic characters.		Appellation.		Value.
<i>roman.</i>	<i>italic.</i>	<i>Round-hand.</i>	<i>Running-hand.</i>	<i>ancient.</i>	<i>modern.</i>	<i>Proper sound.</i> <i>Accidental sound.</i>
19. Т т	T t	<i>Т т</i>	<i>т</i>	твёрдо	те	t d
20. У у	У у	<i>У у</i>	<i>у у</i>	у	у	oo, u (in <i>lub</i> )
21. Ф ф	Ф ф	<i>Ф ф</i>	<i>ф ф</i>	фертъ	эфъ	f, ph
22. Х х	Х х	<i>Х х</i>	<i>х х</i>	хвръ	ха	kh, ch
23. Ц ц	Ц ц	<i>Ц ц</i>	<i>ц ц</i>	цы	це	ts
24. Ч ч	Ч ч	<i>Ч ч</i>	<i>ч ч</i>	червь	че	ch, tsh sh
25. Ш ш	Ш ш	<i>Ш ш</i>	<i>ш ш</i>	ша		sh
26. Щ щ	Щ щ	<i>Щ щ</i>	<i>щ щ</i>	ща		sh-tsh sh
27. Ъ ъ	Ъ ъ	<i>Ъ ъ</i>	<i>ъ ъ</i>	връ		e mute
28. Ы ы	Ы ы	<i>Ы ы</i>	<i>ы ы</i>	вры		e thick we
29. Ь ь	Ь ь	<i>Ь ь</i>	<i>ь ь</i>	врь		y mute
30. Ъ ъ	Ъ ъ	<i>Ъ ъ</i>	<i>ъ ъ</i>	ять		yah, ā yo
31. Э э	Э э	<i>Э э</i>	<i>э э</i>	э		e (in <i>met</i> )
32. Ю ю	Ю ю	<i>Ю ю</i>	<i>ю ю</i>	ю		you u <i>Fr.</i>
33. Я я	Я я	<i>Я я</i>	<i>я я</i>	я		ya ye, e (in <i>yard</i> ) (in <i>yet</i> , <i>met</i> )
34. Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	<i>Ѳ ѳ</i>	<i>ѳ ѳ</i>	ѳнта		f
35. Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	<i>Ѳ ѳ</i>	<i>ѳ ѳ</i>	ижица		ee, i (in <i>pin</i> )
36. Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	<i>Ѳ ѳ</i>	<i>ѳ ѳ</i>	и съ краткой		y mute



## RUSSIAN WRITTEN ALPHABET.

А а М м W Ww  
 Ё ё К к W Ww  
 В в О о Ъ ъ  
 Т т П п L l  
 Д д Р р Ь ь  
 Е е С с Ъ ъ  
 Ж ж М м Ъ ъ  
 З з У у Ю ю  
 И и Ф ф Я я  
 Г г Х х О о  
 К к Ц ц Ч ч  
 Л л Ъ ъ W w

Звукъ Русскій; буквы управленъ дрова  
 немъ и вурсанъ Писателя зинного, но:  
 жетъ равнятъ нынъ въ силъ красотъ  
 и пріятности съ лучшими звуками  
 древности и нашихъ временъ.

Division of  
the letters.

4.—The 36 letters of the Russian alphabet contain 12 *vowels* (гласныя), viz: а, е, и, о, у, ы, ъ, э, ю, я, ѳ, of which the following five: е, ѳ, я, ю, ы, may be called *diphthongs* (дугласныя); 3 *semi-vowels* (полугласныя): ѳ, ѳ, ѳ, and 21 *consonants* (согласныя), viz: б, в, г, д, ж, з, к, л, м, н, п, р, с, т, ф, х, ц, ч, ш, щ, ѳ.

5.—The vowels and semi-vowels, with regard to their sounds, are *hard*, *soft* or *moderate*; and the consonants, according to their degree of intensity, are *strong*, *feeble* or *liquid*, viz:

I. VOWELS.		III. CONSONANTS.	
1. <i>Hard</i> : {and those corresponding:}	2. <i>Soft</i> :	1. <i>Strong</i> : {and those corresponding:}	2. <i>Feeble</i> :
а . . . . .	я	п . . . . .	б
э . . . . .	е	ф . . . . .	в
ы . . . . .	ѳ, ѳ	к . . . . .	г (g lat.)
о . . . . .	ѳ (io)	х . . . . .	г (h lat.)
у . . . . .	ю	ш . . . . .	ж
3. <i>Moderate</i> :		т . . . . .	д
ѳ.		с . . . . .	з
II. SEMI-VOWELS.		ц (тс) . (дз)	These three have no sign of their own.
1. <i>Hard</i> : {and those corresponding:}	2. <i>Soft</i> :	ч (тш) . (дж)	
ѳ . . . . .	ѳ, ѳ	ш (штш) (жлж)	
		3. <i>Liquid</i> .	
		л, м, н, р.	

6.—According to the particular organ of speech which gives utterance to the consonants, they are divided into:

1. *Gutturals* (гортанныя), pronounced in the throat: г, к, х.
2. *Palatals* (поднёбныя), uttered by the palate: л, н, р.
3. *Dentals* (зубныя), sounded by the aid of and against the teeth: д, т.

гортанныя

поднёбныя

зубныя

4. *Lingual* (язычная), articulated by means of applying the tongue closely to the upper teeth: *аwzychnaaw*
5. *Labials* (губныя), produced between the lips: *губныаw*  
б, в, м, п, ф.
6. *Lispings* (шепелеватыя), produced by a whistling of the tongue against the palate: *shepalavatyaw*
7. *Hissings* (шипящія), sounded by a whistling of the tongue against the root of the lower teeth:  
ж, ч, ш, щ.

The vowel *v* and the consonant *ø* have not been included in the divisions, being found only in a few words taken from the Greek, and the former, with regard to pronunciation, being identical with *и*, and the latter with *ø*.

7.—In the foregoing table of the letters we have pointed out their *proper* and *accidental sounds*; the proper sound being the one they usually have, or when used separately, whereas they receive their accidental sound from a particular situation. This accidental sound, and more especially with regard to the vowels, depends upon the *tonic accent* (ударѣніе), of which more hereafter (§ 12).

Pronunciation of the letters.

The rules we are about to give of the pronunciation of the Russian letters, are taken from the dialect of Great-Russia, such as it is spoken at the Court, among the polished and literary world. Other dialects of the Russian tongue are those of Little-Russia, White-Russia, Novgorod, Soozdal and that of Olonetz; all of which however differ not more materially from the Moscovite dialect, than by their pronunciation and the use of some particular expressions.

8.—The vowels, in the Russian language, are differently pronounced according to the place they occupy in a word, or as they are accented or not.

Vowels.

А, а.	{ Proper sound,	{ a (in <i>far</i> ): азбука, <i>alphabet</i> ; каша,
		oat-meal.
	{ Accidental sound,	{ e (in <i>pen</i> ): ужасъ, <i>dread</i> ; часы,
		watch; лошадь, <i>horse</i> .
		{ o (in <i>go</i> ): большаго, <i>great</i> ; ху-
		даго, <i>bad</i> .

This vowel *a* is pronounced as *ah* or *a* (in *fat*); but: 1) It has the sound of short *e* after the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ) in the middle of a word, when not accented; at the end of words however, whether accented or not, it retains its proper sound.—2) In the termination *ago* of the genitive of adjectives, when accented, it has the sound of long *o*. Thus the above words are pronounced: *ahzbooka*, *kàhsha*, *oòzhshess*, *tshessèè*, *lòhshad*, *bahshòhva*, *khuddòhva*.

Я, я.	{ Proper sound,	{ ya (in <i>yard</i> ): яма, <i>ditch</i> ; мясо,
		meat; земля, <i>earth</i> .
	{ Accidental sound,	{ ye, e (in <i>yet</i> ): ядро, <i>kernel</i> ; де-
		вать, <i>nine</i> .

The vowel *я*, when accented, has the sound of the diphthong *yàh* (*yàhma*, *myàhso*, *zèmyah*); but if not accented, it is pronounced *ye* (in *yap*) at the beginning of words and syllables, and *e* (in *get*) after a consonant (*yadrò*, *dàvet*). At the end of words, whether accented or not, it preserves its proper sound; thus заря́, *dawn*; вре́мя, *time*, are pronounced *zaryàh*, *vraìmyah*. The pronoun ея́, *of her*, is pronounced *yayòh*, and the syllable ся of pronominal verbs is pronounced *sah* as: старáться, *to exert one's self* (*stahràhtsah*).

Е, е.	{ Proper sound,	{ ya, a (in <i>yate</i> , <i>gate</i> ) еди́нь, <i>one</i> ; cié,
		this; се́рдце, <i>heart</i> .
	{ Accidental sound,	{ yo, o (in <i>yoke</i> ): берёза, <i>birch-tree</i> ;
		жёлтый, <i>yellow</i> .

At the beginning of words and syllables the vowel *e* is pronounced *yai*, but after a consonant purely as long *a* or short *e*; the above words therefore are pronounced *yaideèn*, *seeyaie*, *sairtse*. This vowel, when accented, sounds like *yo* (in *yoke*), or, after a hissing and the lingual consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ, ц), like *oh* in the following cases, viz: 1) when standing before a consonant followed by one of the hard vowels, *a*, *o*, *y*, *yl*, *z*; 2) at the end of words; 3) in the termination *eu* or *eü* of the instrumental singular case of feminine nouns; 4) before the gutturals (г, к, х) or the simple hissing sounds (ж, ш), which do not allow of a hard vowel after them; 5) in the present tense of verbs, although followed by a soft vowel. Thus the words ёлка, *fir*; слёзы, *tears*; лёдъ, *ice*; житьё, *life*; моё, *my*; землёю, *by the earth*; далёкий, *distant*; несёшь, *thou carriest*; несёте, *you carry*; шелкъ, *silk*; лице, *face*; душею, *with the soul*, are pronounced *yòlka*, *slyòzee*, *lyot*, *zsheetyò*, *mah-yò*, *zamyòyou*, *dalyòkee*, *nessyòsh*, *nessyòtai*, *shòlk*, *leetsò*, *doòshòyou*. It is this pronunciation *yo* or *o* that it is customary now to point out by a diæresis over the vowel *e*; берёза, жёлтый, ёлка, &c., and in this manner it has been distinguished, throughout this Grammar. This vowel *ë* serves besides to give the French pronunciation of *eu*, as in Монтескьё (*Fr. Montesquieu*).

Б, б.	Proper sound,	{ <i>ya</i> , <i>a</i> (in <i>yate</i> , <i>gate</i> ): ЫМЪ, <i>I eat</i> ; вѣра, <i>faith</i> .
	Accidental sound,	{ <i>yo</i> (in <i>yoke</i> ): ГНѢЗДА, <i>nests</i> ; ЗВѢЗДЫ, stars.

This vowel *u* at the beginning of words and syllables sounds like *yai*; but after a consonant like long *a* or short *e* (*yaim*, *vairà*). However after the consonant *u*

the diphthongal sound is felt rather stronger; thus *нѣтъ*, *no*; *нѣмой*, *dumb*, are pronounced *nyet*, *nyamòy*. When accented, this vowel has the sound of *yoh* only in the words *гнѣзда*, *nests*; *звѣзды*, *stars*; *сѣдла*, *saddles*; *цвѣлъ*, *he flourished*; *обрѣлъ*, *he found*; also in their derivatives and compounds, as: *звѣздочка*, *little star*; *гнѣздышко*, *little nest*; *разцвѣлъ*, *it bloomed*; which are pronounced *gnyòhzda*, *zvyòhzdee*, *syòhdla*, *tsvyòll*, *ahbryòll*, *zvyòhzdotshka*, *gnyòhzdishko*, *rahztsvyòll*.

О, о. { Proper sound, o: *дóма*, *at home*; *пóслѣ*, *after*.  
Accidental sound, ah: *хорóшó*, *well*; *колóколá*, *bells*.

The vowel *o*, when accented, keeps its proper sound; but if unaccented, it takes the sound of *ah*; wherefore the above words are pronounced *dòma*, *pòslai*, *kharahshòh*, *kalakalàh*. It must be observed however, that after an accented syllable, the sound of that vowel is extremely short; thus the word *кóлоколъ*, *bell*, is pronounced *kòhlokol* or *kòhl'k'l*.

И, и. { Proper sound, ee: *пѣтѣ*, *to go*; *миръ*, *peace*.  
Accidental sound, yee: *имѣ*, *to them*; *статѣ*, *articles*.

The vowel *u*, at the beginning of the various inflections of the pronoun of the third person (*имѣ*, *ихѣ*, *имѣ*), and after the semi-vowel *ь*, is pronounced as a diphthong, *yem*, *yèmee*, *yeehh*, *stahtyeeè*. But in every other instance it preserves its proper sound, only that after a preposition terminating with the semi-vowel *а*, it takes the thick sound of *ы*, thus the words *въ пѣбѣ*, *in the room*; *съ Иваномѣ*, *with John*; *предѣдущѣй*, *precedent*, are pronounced as if written *вызбѣ*, *сываномѣ*, *предыдущѣй*.

Ы, ы. { Proper sound, e thick: *сынѣ*, *son*; *льстецѣ*, *flatterers*.  
Accidental sound, we: *грибѣ*, *mushrooms*; *мы*, *we*.

The sound of this vowel *и* is a thick utterance of *e*, and to get any thing like a perfect idea of this sound, it is necessary to hear it from the mouth of a Russian. After the labials (б, в, м, п, ф) it sounds very nearly like *we* pronounced very short; thus the words грибы, *mushrooms*; вы, *you*; мы, *we*; снопы, *sheaves*; шкафы, *cupboards*, are pronounced *grebwe*, *vve*, *mve*, *snafwe*, *sh'kafwe*. The Polish language represents this sound by the letter *y*.

Ю, ю. { Proper sound, you, long *u*: югъ, *south*; люблю, *I love*.  
Accidental sound, *u* French: Брюссель, *Brussels*.

This vowel *ю* has properly the diphthongal sound *you* or long *u*; wherefore the pronunciation of the above words is *youk*, *lyoublyou*. In foreign words only it takes the place of the French *u*, as in the word Брюссель, *Brussels* (Fr. *Bruxelles*.)

И, и, У, у, Э, э, V, v.—These four vowels, whether accented or not, always keep their proper sound, as in the words иерей, *priest*; миръ, *the world*; ужинъ, *supper*; пагуба, *loss*; этотъ, *this*; мѣро, *holy chrisn*, which are pronounced *yerèy*, *meer*, *odzsheen*, *pàhgoobah*, *aitot*, *meèro*. For the use of *i* and *v* (instead of *u*) see Orthography.

9.—The semi-vowels (ѣ, ѥ, ѧ), which are placed, Semi-vowels.  
the two first after the consonants, and the last after the vowels, are only half uttered vowels, ѣ being half of the vowel *o*, and ѥ or ѧ half of the vowel *u*.

Ѣ, ѣ, Ъ, ѥ.—The hard semi-vowel ѣ entails on the consonant that precedes it, a strong and harsh sound, as though that letter was double, and has even the effect of causing a feeble consonant to be pronounced like its strong corresponding sound;

thus the words: *станѣ*, *shape*; *вязѣ*, *elm-tree*; *шесть*, *perch*; *кровѣ*, *roof*; *столѣ*, *table*; *братѣ*, *brother*; *пылѣ*, *flame*; *гусарѣ*, *hussar*; *обѣ*, *from*; *гладѣ*, *hunger*; *семѣ*, *this*; *цѣпѣ*, *flail*, are pronounced *stann*, *vyass*, *shesst*, *krolhff*, *stoll*, *brahtt*, *peel*, *goosàrr*, *ohpp*, *glalutt*, *semm*, *tsepp*. On the other hand, the soft semi-vowel *ь* confers a liquifying (*Fr. mouillé*) and slender sound on the preceding consonant; thus the words: *стань*, *become*, *вань*, *marsh*; *шесть*, *six*; *кровь*, *blood*; *столь*, *so much*; *брать*, *to take*; *пыль*, *dust*; *гусарь*, *goose-herd*; *Обь*, *the Obi*; *гладь*, *smoth road*; *семь*, *seven*; *цѣпь*, *chain*, are pronounced *stahn<sup>i</sup>* (like *gn* in the French *Allemagne*), *vyaz<sup>i</sup>*, *shesst<sup>i</sup>*, *krov<sup>i</sup>*, *stohl<sup>i</sup>*, *braht<sup>i</sup>*, *peel<sup>i</sup>*, *goosàr<sup>i</sup>*, *ohb<sup>i</sup>*, *glàd<sup>i</sup>*, *sem<sup>i</sup>*, *tsep<sup>i</sup>*, by causing the *i* to be slightly vibrated and to expire, as it were, within the mouth; the sound and the mechanism for producing it, being closely allied to what is heard in the French words *péril*, *soleil*, *campagne*, *cigogne*, *ligne*. After the hissing consonants (*ж, ч, ш, щ*) the sounds of the semi-vowels *ъ* and *ь* are the same and differ in nothing from each other; thus the words *ножь*, *knife*, and *рожь*, *rye*; *мечъ*, *sword*, and *сѣчь*, *to cut*; *камышъ*, *reed*, and *мышь*, *mouse*; *тощъ*, *fasting*, and *нощъ*, *night*, are pronounced *nohsh* and *rohsh*, *metch* and *setch*, *kahmeesh* and *meesh*, *tohsh<sup>i</sup>tsh* and *nohsh<sup>i</sup>tsh*.

**Й, ѣ.**—The soft semi-vowel *й* is pronounced very rapidly and short along with the vowel that precedes it, and with which it forms but one syllable; thus the words *дай*, *give*; *пей*, *drink*: *мой*, *my*; *жуй*, *chew*; *вѣй*, *blow*; *капѣй*, *brownbay*, are pro-



nounced *da<sup>i</sup>*, or like *di* in *die*, *pe<sup>i</sup>*, *mo<sup>i</sup>*, *zshui*, *va<sup>i</sup>*, *karee<sup>i</sup>*, givin gutterance to a short *i* after the vowel.

10.—The consonants, in the Russian language, Consonants.  
as will be seen below, have also various sounds, viz:

Б, б.	} Proper sound,	{	<i>b</i> : баба, <i>old woman</i> ; бобъ, <i>bean</i> ; бабка, <i>cockle</i> .
В, в.			<i>v</i> : вонъ, <i>away</i> ; ровъ, <i>ditch</i> ; вторникъ, <i>Tuesday</i> .
Д, д.			<i>d</i> : дно, <i>bottom</i> ; родъ, <i>kind</i> ; водка, <i>brandy</i> .
Ж, ж.			<i>zh</i> : жу, <i>I wait</i> ; мужъ, <i>husband</i> ; ложка, <i>spoon</i> .
З, з.			<i>z</i> : звонъ, <i>sound</i> ; глазъ, <i>eye</i> ; сказка, <i>story</i> .

The feeble consonants б, в, д, ж, з, retain their proper sound before the vowels, before the liquid and other feeble consonants, observing that ж (French *j*) is now represented in English by *zsh*. But before the strong consonants and at the end of words terminating in the hard semi-vowel (ъ), they assume the utterance of their corresponding strong letters (п, ф, т, ш, с). Thus the above words are pronounced *bàbah*, *boh<sup>p</sup>*, *bàpka*, *volunn*, *rohff*, *fidhrneek*, *dno*, *rott*, *vdhtkah*, *zsh<sup>i</sup> doo*, *moosh*, *dhshkah*, *zvonn*, *glahss*, *skàska*. In words where з is followed by н, the letter д is silent: thus поздно, *late*; праздникъ, *feast*, are pronounced *pòh<sup>z</sup>no*, *pràh<sup>z</sup>neek*. The word дождикъ, *rain*, is pronounced *dòh<sup>z</sup>sl<sup>i</sup> zsh<sup>ee</sup>k*.

Г, г.	{	Proper sound, <i>g gh</i> : гора, <i>mountain</i> ; погибелъ, <i>perdition</i> .	
		{	<i>k</i> : другъ, <i>friend</i> ; могущій, <i>who could</i> .
			<i>h</i> : Господь, <i>Lord</i> ; Бога, <i>of God</i> .
			<i>kh</i> , <i>ch</i> : Богъ, <i>God</i> ; легкій, <i>light</i> .
		v: краснаго, <i>red</i> ; его, <i>of him</i> .	

In the beginning and in the middle of words the consonant г preserves its proper sound, being articulated with a slight vocalized aspiration, something like the Hibernian *g* when pronounced hard (*gharàh*,

*pahgheèbel*). The accidental sound takes place in the following cases: 1) At the end of words and before the consonant *ш*, it takes the hard utterance of *к* (*drook, mòhkshe*).—In the words Господь, *Lord*; блáго, *well*, and the various inflections of the noun Богъ, *God* (Бóга, Бóгу, Бóгомъ) it is an aspirated (*hospòhd, blàho, bòhhah, bòhhoo, bòhhomn*).—3) In the words Богъ, *God*, and убогъ, *poor*; before a strong consonant, as лѣркѣи, *light*; лѣгче, *lighter*; нóгти, *the nails*, and in the foreign words ending in *пз*, as Петербѣргъ, *Petersburg*; Кеннгсбѣргъ, *Königsberg*, it takes the hard guttural sound of *x* (Germ. *ch, boch, ooboch, lyòchkee, laichshai, nòchtee, paiterboòrch, kaimigsbèrch*).—4) In inflections яго, яго, ого, ego, of adjectives and pronouns, it is pronounced as *v* (*kràsnaivah, yàivòh*).—5) In words derived from foreign languages, it is pronounced either *g* or aspirated *h*, according to the original sound which it is intended to supply, as in the words геогрáфiя, *geography*; гүбѣрнiя, *government*; герóй, *hero*; госпiтáль, *hospital*.

К, к.	{	Proper sound, <i>к</i> : крестъ, <i>cross</i> ; зѣркаю, <i>mirror</i> .
		Accidental sound, { <i>gh</i> : къ Бóгу, <i>to God</i> ; къ землѣ, <i>to the earth</i> . <i>kh, ch</i> : кто, <i>who</i> ; къ кому, <i>to whom</i> .

The consonant *к* when placed before the feeble consonants б, г, д, ж, з, takes the sound of its corresponding feeble *z* (*gh' bòhoo, gh' zàimlai*), and before the consonants н, т, ч, it takes the articulation of *x* (*khto, kh'kahmò*). In every other instance it preserves its proper sound (*kresst, zàirkahlo*).

(Proper sound, *s*: сестра́, *sister*; соса́ние, *suction*.)

С, с. { Accidental sound, { *z*: съ Бо́гомъ, *with God*; сзыва́ть, *to invite*.

(Proper sound: *t*: тетива́, *bow-string*; тётка, *aunt*.)

Т, т. { Accidental sound, { *d*: отда́ть, *to give back*; жени́тба, *marriage*.

The strong consonants *c* and *m* before the feebles *б*, *г*, *д*, *ж*, *з*, assume the articulation of their corresponding feeble consonants *з* and *д*; thus the words above are pronounced *sesstrà*, *sahsàniyai*, *z'òðhhom*, *zseevàt'*, *teteevà*, *tyòhtkah*, *ahddàt'*, *zshenèèdba*. When *cm* is followed by *н*, the consonant *ш* is not at all sounded, as in the words по́стный, *of lent*; ча́с-  
тны́й, *partial*, pronounced *pòhsnee*, *tshàsnee*. The consonant *c*, before the strong hissing sounds *ш* and *ч*, takes the utterance of *ш*; thus сши́вать, *to sew*; сча́стие, *happiness*, are pronounced *sh'sheevàt'*, *sh'tshàstiyai*.

Ч, ч. { Proper sound, *ch* or *tsh*: ча́сь, *hour*; че́пчикъ, *a cap*.  
{ Accidental sound, *sh*: что́, *what*; на́рочно, *on purpose*.

The compound consonant *ч* (тш), which is pronounced the same as the English digraph *ch*, takes the simple sound of *ш*, or English *sh*, in the word что́, and before the consonant *н*; thus we pronounce the above words *tshas*, *tsheptsheek*, *sh'toh*, *nah'ròhshno*. However the word то́чно, *precisely*, is pronounced *tòhtshno*, to distinguish it from то́шно, *I feel sick*, which is pronounced *tòhshno*. The Poles represent this letter by *cz*.

Ш, ш. { Proper sound, *shitsh*: щитъ, *shield*; пло́щъ, *fruit*.  
{ Accidental sound, { *sh*: ово́щной, *of fruit*; помо́щникъ, *helper*.

The compound consonant *ш* (шш), which has the three distinct sounds of *sh-t-sh* or *s-t-sh*, and which the Poles represent by *szcz*, has the simple sound of *ш* before the consonant *н*; the above words consequently are pronounced *sh'tshitt*, or *stchitt*, *shvosh'tsh*, and *ahvahshnòy*, *pahmòshshnik*.

П, п.	. . . . .	<i>p</i> : павлинъ, <i>pea-cock</i> ; столпъ, <i>column</i> .
Ф, ф.	. . . . .	<i>f</i> or <i>ph</i> : фонарь, <i>lantern</i> ; скуфья, <i>scull-cap</i> .
Х, х.	. . . . .	<i>kh</i> , Germ. <i>ch</i> : храмъ, <i>temple</i> ; духъ, <i>odour</i> .
	Proper sound, }	
Ш, ш.	. . . . .	<i>sh</i> , Fr. <i>ch</i> , Germ. <i>sch</i> , Pol. <i>sz</i> : шалашъ, <i>cottage</i> .
Ц, ц.	. . . . .	<i>ts</i> , Germ. <i>z</i> : царь, <i>king</i> ; перецъ, <i>pepper</i> .
Ө, ө.	. . . . .	<i>f</i> : театръ, <i>theatre</i> ; Афины, <i>Athens</i> .

Thesesix strong consonants keep their proper sound, and consequently the above words are pronounced *pa-vleèn*, *stohlp*, *fahnar*, *schoofya*, *khrahnm*, *dookh*, *shal-lush*, *tsar*, *pàhrets*, *fe-àht'r*, *afeènee*, observing that *r* is pronounced as in the Scotch *loch* or German *Dach*. For the use of the consonant *ө*, which is pronounced the same as *gh*, see Orthography.

Л, л.	} Proper sound,	<i>l</i> : ладъ, <i>accord</i> ; лядъ, <i>ill-luck</i> .
М, м.		<i>m</i> : всемъ, <i>to all</i> ; восемь, <i>eight</i> .
Н, н.		<i>n</i> : тронъ, <i>throne</i> ; тронъ, <i>touch</i> .
Р, р.		<i>r</i> : радъ, <i>glad</i> ; рядъ, <i>rank</i> .

The liquid consonants preserve their proper sound, being strong or soft in their utterance according to the vowel or semi-vowel that follows; consequently the above words are pronounced *latt* and *lyat*, *vsaimm* and *vòhsem*; *tròhnm* and *troni*; *rahitt* and *ryahitt*. It is necessary to observe here that the Russian consonant *л*, before the hard vowels and strong con-

sonants, by no means resembles the usual English *l*, in as much as in that situation it is pronounced with much greater force, and which is obtained by a strong pressure of the tongue against the upper teeth. The Poles represent this sound by *l* with a bar (*ł*). The other three sounds correspond with those of the English language, only that the *p* has a stronger trill, partaking more of the Irish utterance of this letter.

11.—A vowel, either by itself, or joined to one or more consonants, with or without a semi-vowel, forms, in the Russian language, a *syllable* (сло́гъ, складъ); and one or several of these, used to represent a thought or sensation, form a word (сло́во). Words consequently may be *monosyllables* (одно-сло́жныя) or *polysyllables* (многосло́жныя), according to their being compounded of one or more syllables, as: *и*, *and*; *я*, *I*; *онъ*, *he*; *аи*, *ah*; *сей*, *this*; *два*, *two*; *страхъ*, *fright*; *зи-ма*, *winter*; *до-ро́-га*, *road*; *до-бро-дѣ-тель*, *virtue*; *до-бро-дѣ-тель-ный*, *virtuous*, &c.

The Russian language contains a few words that have no vowel at all, or whose vowel has changed into a semi-vowel; such are the particles *въ*, *къ*, *съ*, *бъ*, *жъ*, *ль* (instead of *во*, *ко*, *со*, *бы*, *же*, *ли*). These words, called *assyllables* (безсло́жныя), are joined to the syllables of the preceding or following word, as: *въ домъ*, *in the house*; *къ окнѣ*, *towards the window*; *съ тобою*, *with thee*; *если бѣ*, *if*; *однако жѣ*, *however*; *точно ль*, *is it right so?*

12.—In polysyllabic words there is always one syllable that experiences a greater stress of the voice than the rest; thus in the words *мáло*, *little*; *го-тóво*, *ready*; *говори́те*, *speak*, the syllables *ма*, *то*, *пи*, are more discernably audible than the syllables

Syllables  
and words.

Tonic  
accent.

10, 20, 60, *me*. This modification of the voice is in fact what is meant by *tonic accent* (ударѣніе), and is indicated by a little mark over the vowel. The accented syllable is called *long* (дѳлгіѳ), the others *short* (краткіе).

The accent is no longer printed in Russian books, except to distinguish some homonymous words and grammatical inflections of similar forms, as замѳкъ, *castle*, and замѳкъ, *lock*; слѳва, *of the word* (gen. sing.), and слѳва, *words* (nomin. plur.), as will be seen in Part IV, Prosody. It is here the place to observe that in the Russian language there is no rule by which to determine the accent, and that in one and the same word is it frequently shifted from one syllable to another; for which reason all the words used in this Grammar are printed with the accent they ought to have.

The following *Reading-exercise*, in which the reading of the Russian text is facilitated by an imitation of the sounds according to English utterance, and an interlinear literal translation added, it is confidentially hoped, will materially assist the learner to make himself master of the rules we have given on the pronunciation of the letters and words of the Russian language.

#### READING-EXERCISE.

Вчера́	въ	шесть	часѳвъ	ўтра	поѳхали	мы
Ftsherà	f'	shest	tshessóff	oótra	pah-yaikhalee	mwe-
Yesterday	at	six	o'clock	of the morning	went	we

верхѳмъ	въ	Пѳтсдамъ.	Ничего́	нѣтъ	скучнѣе	этой
verkhómm	f'	Pótsdam.	Neetshaivó	nyet	scooshnaiyai	altoy
on horseback	to	Potsdam.	Nothing	there is	duller	than this

дорѳги:	вездѣ	глубѳкій	песѳкъ,	и	ни	какихъ	заниматель-
dahróghee:	vezdai	gloobóhkee	pessók,	ee	neekahkeekh	zaneemáhtel-	
road:	every where	a deep	sand,	and not any	interest-		

нихъ	предмѳтовъ	въ	глазѣ	не	попада́ется.	Но	видѣ
neekh	praidmaitoff	v'	glahzáh	nai	pahpahdáyetsah.	No	veet
ing	object	to the eyes	not presents	itself.	But the sight		

Потсдама, а особливо Санъ-Суси, очень хорошъ. Мы  
 Potsdahmah, ah ahsahbleévo San-Soosée, ôtshain kharòsh. Mwe  
*of Potsdam, and above all of Sans-Souci, (is) very fine. We*

остановились въ трактиръ, не доѣзжая до городскихъ воротъ.  
 ahtahnahvélees f' trakteérai, nai da-yaizsh'zsháyah da garadskeekh vahróť.  
*stopped at the hotel, not arriving to the city-gates.*

Отдохнувъ и заказавъ обѣдъ, мы пошли въ  
 Addahkhnoöv ee zakazáhv ahbyaid, mwe pashlee v'  
*Having rested ourselves and ordered a dinner, we went into*

городъ. У воротъ записали наши имена. На парадномъ  
 görot. oo varót zahpeesáhlee náshee eemaináh. Nah paráhdnom  
*the town. At the gates one wrote our names. On the parade-*

мѣстѣ противъ дворца, училась гвардія: прекрасные  
 maistai pròhteev dvahrtsáh, ootsheélahs gváhrdyah: praikráhsneeyai  
*place opposite the palace, exercised the guards: very fine*

люди, прекрасные мундиры! Видъ дворца со  
 lyóudee, praikráhsneeyai moondeéree! Veed dvahrtsáh sah  
*men, superb uniforms! The sight of the palace from*

стороны сада очень хорошъ. Городъ, вообще  
 starahnée sáhda ôtshain kharòsh. Ghórod vah-ahbstshai  
*the side of the garden (is) very fine. The town in general*

прекрасно выстроено; въ большой улицѣ много  
 praikráhsno vvéstroyain; v' bahlshòy oòleetsai mnògo  
*(is) well built; in the great street (there are) many*

великолѣпныхъ домовъ, строенныхъ отчасти по образцу  
 vaileekahlainpeekh dahmòf, stròyainneekh atisháhstee pah abhbrahtsoò  
*of magnificent houses, built partly on the model*

огромнѣйшихъ римскихъ палаť и на собственные деньги  
 agròmnaysheekh reemskeekh pahláht ee na sòbstvainneeyah déynghee  
*of the vastest Roman palaces and at the own expences*

покойнаго короля: онъ дарилъ ихъ, кому хотѣлъ. Теперъ  
 rakòyuhvah kahralyáh: on dareél yeeekh, kamoò khahtail. Taipér  
*of the late king: he gave them, to whom he chose. Now*

сѣи огромныя зданія пусты, или занимаются  
 seeeyè agròmneeyah zdáhneeyah poóstee, eelè zaneemähyoostah  
*the vast edifices (are) empty, or are occupied*

солдатами. — Въ Потсдамѣ есть русская церковь подѣ  
 sahlidätamee. — F' Pötsdahmai yest roöskayah tsairkov pahd  
*by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under*

надзираниемъ стараго русскаго солдата, который живётъ  
 nahdzeerähneeyem stärahvah roöskahvah sahlidätah, kahtöree zsheev'yött  
*the care of an old Russian soldier, who lives*

тамъ со времёнъ царствования Императрицы Анны. Мы  
 tahn sah vraimain tsärsstvovaneeyah eemperatreëtsee ännnee. Mwe  
*there since the times of the reign of the empress Anne. We*

насилу могли сыскать его. Дряхлый старикъ  
 nahseeloo maghleè seeskäht yaivò. Dr'yäkhlee stahreek  
*with difficulty could find him. The decrepit old man*

сидѣлъ на большихъ креслахъ, и услышавъ, что  
 seedail na bahlsheekh krèslakhk, ee oosleëshahv shto  
*was sitting in a large arm-chair, and having heard that*

мы Русскіе, протянулъ къ намъ руки, и  
 mwe roöskeeyai, prahtyahnoöl k' nahm roökee, ee  
*we (are) Russians, he extended towards us the hands, and*

дрожащимъ голосомъ сказалъ: Слава Бóгу! Слава Бóгу!  
 drahzshästsheem gölossom skahzhähl: slävah Böhoo! slävah Böhoo!  
*with a trembling voice he said: Glory to God! Glory to God!*

Онъ хотѣлъ говорить сперва съ нами по-русски: но мы  
 ohn khahtail gahvareët sperväh s' nähmee pah-roösskee: no mwe  
*He wanted to speak at first with us in Russian: but we*

съ трудомъ могли разумѣть другъ друга. Намъ надлежало  
 s' troodöm mahgleè rahzoomait droog droögah. Nam nahdlaizshählo  
*with difficulty could understand each other. To us it was obliged*

повторять почти каждое слово. „Пойдѣмте въ церковь  
 pahvtahryäht pahsthee kázshdoyai slòvo. „Pie-dyömtai f' tsairkov  
*to repeat almost each word. „Let us go into the church*



Божію, сказа́лъ онъ, и помóлимся вмѣстѣ, хотя ны́нѣ  
 Bózsheeyou, skahzáhl on, ee pahmóhleemsa vmaístai, khahtyáh neénai  
*of God, said he, and let us pray together, although to-day*

и нѣтъ праздника.“ Сѣрдце моё наполнилось  
 ee n'yet prázneekah.“ Sairise mah-yoh napóhlneeelos  
*even there is not any holiday.“ Heart my filled itself*

благоговѣніемъ, когд́а отворилась дверь въ цѣрковь,  
 blahagahvaineeyaim, kaghda ahtvareélas dvair f' tsairkov,  
*with devotion, when opened itself the door into the church,*

гдѣ стóлько времени ц́арствуетъ глубо́кое молча́ніе,  
 ghdyai stólko vraimainee tsárstvooyet gloobókoyai mahltsháneeyai.  
*where so much of time reigns a profound silence,*

едва перерыва́емое сла́быми вздо́хами и т́ихимъ го́лосомъ  
 yaidváh perereeváyaimoyai sláhbemee vzdóhkhahmee ee teekheem ghólossom  
*hardly interrupted by the feeble groans and the soft voice*

ста́рца, кото́рый по воскресе́ньямъ прихóдитъ туд́а чита́ть  
 stártsah, kahtóhree pah vahskraisainyahm preekhóhdeet toodáh tsheetáht  
*of old man, who on the sundays comes there to read*

святы́йшую изъ кни́гъ, пригото́вляющую егó къ  
 svyachtýshooyou eez kneegh, preegahtahvlyáyoustshooyou yaivóh k'  
*the most holy of the books, preparing him to*

блаже́нной вѣ́чности. Въ цѣркви всё чи́сто. Цѣрков́ныя  
 blahzshainnoy vaitsnostee. F' tsairkvee fsyo tsheetsto. Tsairkóvneeyah  
*the happy eternity. In the church all (is) clean. Church-*

кни́ги и у́тварь храня́тся въ сунду́кѣ. Отъ вре́мени до  
 kneeghee ee oótvahr khrahnyátsah f' soondookai. Aht vraimenee doh  
*books and ornaments are kept in a trunk. From time to*

вре́мени стари́къ перебира́етъ ихъ съ моли́твой. „Ча́сто  
 vraimainee stahreék perebeeráyait yeekh s' mahlettvooyou. „Tshásto  
*time the old man arranges them with prayer. „Often*

отъ всегó сѣрдца, сказа́лъ онъ, сокруша́юсь я о томъ, что  
 aht fsaivó sairtsah, skahzáhl on, sahkroosháyous yah ah tomm, shtó  
*from all the heart, said he, grieve myself I of that, that*

по смѣрти моѣй, которая отъ меня конечно уже не  
 pah smairtee mah-yéy, kahtórayah aht mainyah kahnaiashno oozshai nai  
*after death my, which from me certainly already not (is)*

далѣко, нѣ кому будетъ смотрѣть за цѣрковью.“ — Съ  
 dahlyóhko, nai kahmoo bóódaít smahtrait zah tsairkovyuu.“ — S’  
*far, no person will watch over the church.“ — During*

полчасá пробыли мы въ семъ священномъ мѣстѣ,  
 poltshahsá próbhwelee mwe f’ saim svyahststshainnom maístai,  
*half an hour remained we in this holy spot,*

прости́лся съ почтеннымъ старикомъ, и пожела́ли ему  
 prahstélees s’ pahstshainneem stahreekóm, ee pahzshailalee yaimoo  
*bade farewell with the venerable old man, and wished him*

тихой смѣрти.  
 teekhoy smairtee.  
*an easy death.*

Карамзинъ.  
 Kahrahmzeén.

Elements  
 of speech.

13.—Words, when considered as the elements of speech, are either *denominative* (знаменательныя) or *auxiliary* (служебныя). The former express the idea of objects, of their qualities or actions; the latter merely design the connexion that exists among the denominative words; thus in this phrase: Птицы летаютъ по воздуху, а рыбы живутъ въ водѣ, *birds fly in the air, and fishes live in water*, the denominative words are: *птицы, летаютъ, воздуху, рыбы, живутъ, водѣ*, and the auxiliary words are: *по, а, въ*. The former are called the *parts* (части), and the latter the *particles of speech* (частицы рѣчи). The parts and particles of speech, in the Russian language, may be brought under nine different heads; namely:

## I. PARTS OF SPEECH:

1. The *substantive* (имя существительное).
2. The *adjective* (имя прилагательное).
3. The *pronoun* (мѣстоимѣніе).
4. The *verb* (глаголь).
5. The *participle* (причастіе).
6. The *adverb* (нарѣчіе) and the *gerund* (дѣепричастіе).

## II. PARTICLES OF SPEECH:

7. The *preposition* (предлогъ).
8. The *conjunction* (союзъ).
9. The *interjection* (междомѣтіе).

Certain languages, such as the French, German, English and others, make use of a distinctive word before a common noun, whenever employed in speech, unless the same be sufficiently determined by the accompanying word; thus the French say: *le chapeau, la plume*; the German: *der Hut, die Feder*, and the English: *the hat, the pen*. If the common noun, however, be taken in an indeterminate sense, it is then preceded by another word; as: *un chapeau, une plume*; *ein Hut, eine Feder*; *a hat, a pen*. This kind of word is called *article* (членъ), and distinguished in those tongues by the *definite* and *indefinite* article. In French the articles are: *le, la, les*, and *un, une, des*; in German: *der, die, das, die*, and *ein, eine*; in English: *the* and *a* or *an*. The Russian language has no articles, it being left to the sense of the sentence to indicate whether the common noun is taken in a determinate or indeterminate sense. This deficiency is sometimes also supplied by other words, such as *тотъ, this*, to indicate a determinate, and *нѣкоторый, certain*, to indicate an indeterminate sense; as: *Тотъ человекъ, о которомъ вы говорите, пришѣлъ ко мнѣ, the man of whom you speak, is come to me; нѣкоторый человекъ пришѣлъ ко мнѣ, a man is come to me.*

14.—All words, whether parts of speech or particles, are either *primitive* or *derivative*, *simple* or *compound*. The *primitives* (первообразныя) are such

Division  
of words.

as are not formed from other words; e. g. садъ, *garden*; жена, *woman*; бѣлый, *white*; жить, *to live*. The *derivatives* (производныя) are such as are formed from words already existing in the language, e. g. садовникъ, *gardener*; женскій, *womanly*; бѣлизна, *whiteness*; пережить, *to over-live*. *Compounds* (сложныя) are formed of two denominative words; e. g. садоводство, *horticulture*, from садъ, *garden* (lat. *hortus*), and водить, *cultivate*; трудолюбіе, *love of work*, from трудъ, *work*, and любить, *to love*. All other words, whether primitive or derivative, are *simple* (простыя).

Roots  
of words.

15.—Every word, whether primitive or derivative, simple or compound, is formed from *roots* (корни), or from radical syllables and letters, which become words by the junction of other roots. Thus in the words: зрю, *I see*; зрѣніе, *the sight*; зримый, *visible*; зоркій, *sharp-sighted*; обозрѣть, *to examine*, the root is the syllable зор or the mixed consonant зр, which becomes significant by the addition of the syllables ю, ніе, имый, кій, обо, &c.—The roots may be divided into *principal* and *secondary*. 1) The *principal* roots (главные) are such as serve to form denominative words, or parts of speech; such are the roots вид, ок, рук, whence the words видъ, *sight*; око, *eye*; рука, *hand*, are formed. 2) The *secondary* roots (придаточные) are those from which, in the first place, auxiliary words or particles are formed, e. g. изъ, *of*; въ, *in*; съ, *with*; and which afterwards serve to form words by being united with the principal roots; e. g. видный, *visible*; очки, *spectacles*; поручить, *to commit*. Thus the secondary roots

are: *a) initial* (предыдущіе), placed at the beginning of words, and called *prefixes* or *prepositions*, e. g. у-ходъ, *departure*; от-казъ, *refusal*; and *b) final* (послѣдующіе), which form the terminations of words, and are called *suffixes*, e. g. вод-а, *water*; зем-ля, *earth*; крас-ный, *red*; дѣл-ать, *to do*.

In order to trace Russian words properly so called, that is to say Slavonian words, to their roots, the learner will do well to proceed in the following manner. Let us take as examples the words преизбыточествовать, *to superabound*, and засвидѣтельствова́ніе, *attestation*. After taking away the initial secondary roots *пре* and *за*, and the finals *ать* and *аніе*, there remain the words избыточество, *abundance*, and свидѣтельство, *testimony*, which are derived from избытокъ, *superfluity*, and свидѣтель (in Slavonian *свѣдѣтель*), *witness*. These last mentioned are themselves derived from избытъ, *to abound*, and свѣдѣть, *to know*; words which are formed of the prepositions *изъ* and *съ*, joined to the simple verbs быть, *to be*, and вѣдѣть or вѣдать, *to know*, from whence if we take away the terminations of the infinitive, there remain *бы* and *вѣд*. We thus see the root of the word преизбыточествовать is **БЫ**; the steps of its formation being apparent: быть, избытъ, избытокъ, избыточество, избыточествовать, преизбыточествовать; the word засвидѣтельствова́ніе has **ВѢД** for its root, whence are derived: вѣдѣть or вѣдать, свѣдѣть, свѣдѣтель (in Russian *свидѣтель*), свидѣтельство, свидѣтельствова́ть, засвидѣтельствова́ть, засвидѣтельствова́ніе.

Every Russian word of Slavonian origin may be submitted to the same process of dissection, and the learner will find the following words appropriate as an exercise: независимость, *independence*; неизмѣримый, *immensurable*; председа́тельствова́ть, *to preside*; сострада́ніе, *compassion*; изобре́тательность, *invention, inventive faculty*; вспомо́гательный, *auxiliary*; честолю́біе, *ambition*; удовле́вительный, *satisfactory*; путеше́ственникъ, *traveller*; законо́дательство, *legislation*; земе́льскій, *agricultural*; царедво́рецъ, *courtier*.

Inflections  
of words.

16.—The parts of speech, or denominative words, are distinguished from the particles, or auxiliary words, by being subject to sundry *inflections* (измѣненія), which are usually of two kinds: *constant* (постоянныя) and *accidental* (случайныя).—1) The *constant* inflections are met with in the structure of derivative and compound words. This is what is called the *formation* (образованіе) of a word; e. g. царь, *king*; царица, *queen*; царскій, *royal*; царство, *kingdom*; царственный, *of the kingdom*; царствовать, *to reign*; царствованіе, *reigning*.—2) The *accidental* inflections are the different terminations and prepositions which a word takes, and which without changing its nature serve to express some circumstance connected with the idea designated by the word; e. g. рука, *the hand*; рукою, *with the hand*; руки, *the hands*; вижу, *I see*; видишь, *thou seest*; бѣлый, *white*; бѣлѣйшій, *whiter*; побѣлѣе, *a little whiter*, &c.

Metaplasms  
of words.

17.—The different inflections of which words are susceptible, undergo, in order to facilitate the pronunciation, *metaplasms* (перемѣны), which at times change even the final letters of the radical word. These metaplasms or alterations consist in the *permutation* (замѣна) of one letter for another; in the *epenthesis* (вставка) and *prosthesis* (приставка) of some letters, and in the *apocope* (усѣченіе) and *syncope* (пзѣятіе) of others.

Permutation  
of letters.

18.—The *permutation* of letters, in the Russian language, arises from the circumstance that some vowels cannot be placed in juxta-position with certain consonants; thus the hissing, guttural and lingual

consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ; г, к, х; п) cannot be joined with some vowels; the vowels я, е, ю, and the semi-vowel ъ, never admit immediately before them either the guttural consonants (г, к, х), in any inflection, or sometimes the dental and lipping consonants (д, т; з, ц); and further the vowel и, in the derivation of words, never admits before it either the gutturals or the lingual (г, к, х; п), which are then changed for the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ), as is seen below.

## PERMUTATION OF LETTERS.

1. The consonants г, д, з, }	before я, е, ъ, ю, ъ, }	change into ж.
2. The consonants к, т, ц, }		change into ч.
3. The consonants х, с, }		change into ш.
4. The consonants ск, ст, }		change into щ.
5. The vowel я, }	after г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ; ц, }	changes into а.
6. The vowel ю, }		changes into у.
7. The vowel ы, after г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ, . . .		changes into и.
8. The vowel о, after ж, ч, ш, щ; ц, . . .		changes into е.
9. The vowel ъ, after the vowel и, . . .		changes into и.
10. The semi-vowel ъ, after a vowel, . . .		changes into й.
11. The semi-vowels ъ and ѱ, before a consonant with ъ, change into е.		
12. The semi-vowel ъ, before two consonants, . . .		changes into о.

Examples: 1) *служить*, to serve; *вижу*, I see; *рѣжь*, cut, from *служá*, servant; *видѣть*, to see; *рѣзать*, to cut; 2) *мучить*, to torment; *свѣча*, candle; *отѣчество*, native land, from *муча*, torment; *свѣтъ*, light; *отѣцъ*, father; 3) *тише*, slower; *прошѣніе*, petition, from *тихъ*, slow; *проси́тъ*, to ask; 4) *ищу́*, I seek; *чище*, purer, from *иска́тъ*, to seek; *чистъ*, pure; 5) *служи́а* (for *служися́*), serving; 6) *вожу́*, (for *вожю́ю*), I lead; 7) *ру́ки*, the hands; *муж́и*, the men (for *ру́кы*, *мужю́и*); 8) *пальце́мъ* (for *пальцо́мъ*), with the finger; 9) *въ Россіи́* (for *въ Россію́*), in Russia; 10) *недѣля́*, week, has for its genitive plural *недѣль*; whilst *ше́я*, the neck, has *шей*; 11) *судьба́*, destiny; *копѣйка*, *копѣекъ*, have in the genitive plural *суде́бъ*, *копѣе́къ* (for *судебъ*, *копѣйкѣ*); 12) *во мнѣ́*, in me; *со всѣ́мъ*, with all (for *въ мнѣ́*, *съ всѣ́мъ*).

These permutations are subject to certain exceptions. The dental consonants (д, т) sometimes preserve the Slavonian per-

mutation жд and щ, as граждани́нъ, *citizen*; пи́ща, *aliment*, from гра́дъ, city; пита́тъ, to nourish. When the accented vowel *e* is pronounced *o* (after ж, ч, ш, щ, ц), the vowel *o* may be used, as хоро́шo, *well*; плечо́, *shoulder*; яйцо́, *egg*. It still remains to be observed that in words where г, к, х, ц, are changed before я and я, as но́жка, *a little foot*; вѣ́чный, *eternal*; пасту́шка, *shepherdess*; личны́й, *personal* (from ногá, foot; вѣ́къ, an age; пасту́хъ, shepherd; личе́, individual), the change is not required by the letters я and я, but arises from the circumstance that formerly the semi-vowel *ь*, before which the consonants т, к, х, ц, change into ж, ч, ш, was employed before those consonants (но́жка, вѣ́чный, &c.), but has been suppressed in modern orthography.

Epenthesis  
and pros-  
thesis.

19.—*Epenthesis*, or the insertion of a letter in the middle of a word, and *prosthesis*, or the addition of a letter at the beginning of a word, take place both to facilitate the pronunciation, and to unite letters which cannot be placed in juxta-position. The vowels *o* and *e* are inserted between two consonants at the end of words, and thus serve as a connecting link between the two roots of a compound word; e. g. огонь, *fire*; вѣ́теръ, *wind* (instead of the Slavonian огонь, вѣ́тра); законодатель, *legislator*; землеописáние, *geography*. The consonant л is inserted also after the labials (б, в, м, п, ф), when they ought to be followed by ю or е; e. g. люблю́, *I love*; дешѣ́е, *cheaper* (from любить, to love; дѣ́шево, cheap). The consonant н is also epenthetic in вну́шать, *to suggest*; подни́мать, *to take up*; на него́, *against him*. The consonant в is sometimes added at the beginning of a word, before the vowel *o*; e. g. вóсемь, *eight* (instead of the Slavonian осьмь); вóстры, *sharp*; вóтчина, *patrimony* (used familiarly for о́стрый, отчина). The same is the



case with the vowel *o* in оржаной, of *rye* (for ржаной).

20.—*Ароскопе*, or the cutting of a letter at the end of a word, and *syncope*, or the elision of a letter in the middle of a word, are employed to facilitate or soften the pronunciation, e. g. со мной, *with me*; чтобъ, *in order that*; двинуть, *to move*; обеща́ть, *to promise*; блестя́ть, *to shine*; полтора, *one and a half* (instead of со мною, чтобы, двину́ть, обеща́ть, блестя́ть, полтора́). Ароскопе  
and syncope.

#### THE SUBSTANTIVE.

21.—The *substantives* (существительныя имена) Division of  
substantives. in the Russian language are of two kinds: common nouns or *appellatives* (нарица́тельные), as: челове́къ, *man*; го́родъ, *town*; рѣ́ка, *river*; and individual or *proper* nouns (собственные), as: Влади́миръ, *Vladimir*; Москв́а, *Moscow*; Во́лга, *the Volga*.—Among the common nouns we distinguish a class called *collective* (собира́тельные), such are: наро́дъ, *people*; ста́до, *herd*; лѣ́съ, *forest*; also *material* nouns (веще́ственные), such are: му́ка, *flour*; ма́сло, *oil*; зо́лото, *gold*.—The proper names of men are of three kinds: *a*) *christian* names (крѣ́стныя имена), as: Алекса́ндръ, *Alexander*; Ле́въ, *Leon*; Ольга, *Olga*; Любо́вь, *Amy*; *b*) *patronymic* names (отче́ственные), as: Алекса́ндровичъ and Алекса́ндровна, *son and daughter of Alexander*; Льво́вичъ and Льво́вна, *son and daughter of Leon*; and *c*) *family* names (прѣзви́шныя, фами́льныя), as: Держави́нъ, *Derzhavin*; Орло́въ, *Orlof*; Долгору́кий, *Dolgorouky*; Толсто́й, *Tolstoi*.

Properties  
of nouns.

22.—The properties of substantives in the Russian language are, the *gender* (родъ), the *aspect* (видъ), the *number* (число) and the *case* (падѣжъ). The two former are *constant* inflections, belonging to the formation of nouns; the two latter are *accidental* inflections, employed in the declension.

Genders.

23.—In the Russian language there are three genders: the *masculine* (мужескій), the *feminine* (женскій) and the *neuter* (средній). The genders of nouns are known, in the names of animate beings, by their *signification*, and in the names of inanimate and abstract objects, by their *termination*.

1. The *masculine* gender comprehends the names of animate beings of the male sex; e. g. отецъ, *the father*; герой, *the hero*; царь, *the king*; юноша, *a young man*; дядя, *an uncle*; мѣняло, *a money-changer*; подмастерье, *a journeyman*; and also, such names of inanimate and abstract objects terminating in ѣ, и, and some which end in ъ, e. g. домъ, *the house*; покой, *repose*; корабль, *a vessel*.

2. The *feminine* gender comprehends the names of animate beings of the female sex; e. g. сестра, *the sister*; няня, *a nurse*; дочь, *the daughter*; Елизаветъ, *Elizabeth*; Кlio, *Clio*; also the names of inanimate and abstract objects terminating in а, я, and some which end in ъ; e. g. книга, *a book*; пуля, *a ball*; добродѣтель, *virtue*.

3. The *neuter* gender comprehends the names of animate beings where the distinction of sex is not evident, as: дитя and чадо, *a child*; чудовище, *a monster*; and also the names of animate and abstract

objects terminating in *o*, *e*, and *мя*, e. g. зóлото, *gold*; мóре, *the sea*; вréмя, *the time*.

As regards the rules relating to the genders, the following observations are of importance:

1. The nouns which designate any particular species of animals, form an exception to the rule which declares the gender of nouns designating animate being to be determined by their *signification*. These nouns are, according to their *termination*, either masculine, as: чéловѣкъ, *a man*; носóръгъ, *a rhinoceros*; соко́ль, *a falcon*; окунь, *a perch*; or feminine, as: обезья́на, *an ape*; соба́ка, *a dog*; ло́шадь, *a horse*; щу́ка, *a pike*.

2. To determine the gender of nouns terminating in *u*, the following rules may be given:

1) Besides such nouns as designate animate beings of the male sex, the following are *masculine*: a) The names of the months, as: янвѣрь, *January*; ию́ль, *July*; дека́брь, *December*, &c. b) The names of active objects, or agents, although inanimate, terminating in *тель*, as: числѣ́тель, *the numerator*; мно́житель, *the multiplier*, &c. c) The common nouns designating animate beings, as: гу́съ, *a goose*; ло́сь, *an elk*; &c., with the exception of some names of animals which are feminine, such as: ло́шадь, *a horse*; сельдь, *a herring*; вошь, *a louse*; мышь, *a mouse*; форéль, *the trout*, and some others. d) The names of towns, lakes and places, whether Russian or foreign, as: Яросла́вь, *Yaroslav*; Сева́стопо́ль, *Sebastopol*; Брю́ссель, *Bruxelles*, with the exception of Каза́нь, *Kazan*; Астраха́нь, *Astrachan*; Тверь, *Tvaïr*; Верса́ль, *Versailles*; Було́нь, *Boulogne*; Марсе́ль, *Marseilles*; Испага́нь, *Ispahan*; Эрива́нь, *Erivan*.

2) The following are *feminine*: a) All the names of abstract objects, e. g. жизнь, *life*; честь, *honour*, &c., with the exception of де́нь, *the day*; пере́чень, *an extract*; вопль, *cries*; вихрь, *a whirlwind*; and foreign words, such as: контро́ль, *control*; паро́ль, *parole*; спекта́ль, *spectacle*; сти́ль, *style*. b) The names of rivers and countries; e. g. Обь, *the Obi*; Сибирь, *Siberia*, &c., except Анады́рь, *Anadir*. c) The common names of inanimate objects; e. g. бровь, *the eyebrow*; вѣтвь, *a branch*; це́рковь, *a church*, &c., except the following which are masculine:

алкоголь, alcohol.	костыль, a crutch-stick.	ревень, the rhubarb.
алтарь, an altar.	кочень, a head of cab-	ремень, a strap.
бемоль, B-flat. [tunic.	кремень, a flint. [bage.	рубль, a rooble.
бешметъ, Tartar under	кремль, citadel, castle.	руль, the helm.
бизань, mizzen-sail.	крендель, a cracknel.	сбитень, honey-tea.
би-ль, a billiard ball.	кубаре, a top.	сера-ль, a seraglio.
блугарь, massicot. [sail.	кудере, curly hair.	складень, a necklace.
брамсе-ль, top-gallant	куко-ль, corn-cockle.	слизень, the slug.
бредень, a drag-net.	куль, a mat-sack.	словаре, a dictionary.
букварь, ABC-book.	лагерь, a camp.	срослень, double branche.
буллетень, a bulletin.	лапотъ, a bast-shoe.	стабень, a window-
вексель, bill of exchange.	ларь, a large chest.	shutter.
вензель, a monogram.	лэжень, foundation beam.	стаксель, stay-sail.
водиль, a tubercle.	локоть, the elbow.	стапель, stocks, launch.
гвоздь, a nail.	ломоть, a slice.	стебель, a stalk.
глаголь, a crane.	марсе-ль, top-sail.	стержень, core (of a boil).
горбыль, a sleeve-board.	мергель, marl.	стихаре, the surplice.
госпиталь, a hospital.	мандаль, almonds.	сударе, a winding-sheet.
гребень, a comb.	мнткаль, calico.	сухаре, a rusk, biscuit.
грифель, a slate-pencil.	монастырь, a convent.	тополь, the poplar.
груздь, a fungus.	муфель, a muffle.	трэнзель, the curb.
дэготь, tar.	нашатирь, sal ammoniac.	трифель, a truffle.
денгирь, denarius.	николь, nickel.	туфель, a slipper.
дождь, rain.	ноготь, a finger-nail.	уголь, charcoal.
дзягиль, angelica.	нуль, a cipher, zero.	уровень, a level.
жёлудь, an acorn.	огонь, fire.	фитиль, a match. [house).
жонкиль, the jonquille.	ораре, the stole.	флигель, a wing (of a
золотень, golden-rod.	панцырь, coat of mail.	фонарь, a lantern.
зубаре, a toothed plane.	пень, a stump.	фухтель, flat side of a
йверень, a splinter.	перистиль, a peristyle.	хмель, the hop. [sword.
ицирь, ginger.	перкаль, shirting calico.	ходень, an object in mo-
калпиль, a quadrille.	перстень, a ring.	tion.
календарь, almanach.	пистоль, a pistole.	хрусталь, crystal.
камень, a stone.	пламень, flame.	циркуль, pair of compas-
картофель, potatoes.	пластырь, a plaster.	цоколь, the socle. [ses.
кашель, a cough.	плетень, wattled hedge.	чекмень, cosack upper-
кегель, a skittle.	портфель, a portfolio.	coat.
кёрвель, chervil.	поршень, a piston.	черноталь, bay-leaved
кель, the keel (of a ship).	прележень, place chafed	willow.
кипень, hot-spring.	by lying.	чихирь, new wine.
кисель, a sourish jelly.	протвень, dripping-pan.	шелудь, the scab.
кистень, buller tied to a	профиль, a profile.	шесель, a bushel.
коготь, a claw. [string.	пузырь, a bladder.	шкворень, pole-bolt (of
козырь, a trump.	пупырь, a pimple.	a coach).
колёдезь, a well.	пустырь, a vacant space.	шпиль, a carstan.
копытець, wild nard.	пузь, the road.	штёмпель, a stamp.
корабль, a ship.	пьяязь, money.	штиль, a calm.
корень, a root.	рашкуль, blue-black.	щавель, sorrel.
косаре, chopping knife.	рашпиль, a rasp.	щёбень, rubbish.

ѣрь, the letter ѣ.

якорь, an anker.

ясень, the ash-tree.

э.ль, the letter л.

янтарь, sea-amber.

ячмень, barley.

3. Words taken from foreign languages and ending in *и, у, ю*, as: *колибри*, a humming bird; *какадү*, the kakato; *ревю*, the review, are masculine, when they signify an animate being, and neuter when signifying an inanimate object. The other parts of speech, used as substantives, are neuter; e. g. *громкое ура*, a noisy hurrah; *первое нѣтъ*, the first no; *несносное я*, an insupportable I.

4. Some nouns, terminating in *а* and *я*, and designating animate beings, with some quality attached, are of the common gender (*общій*), being both masculine and feminine. The following are examples:

бродяга, a vagabond (*man or woman*).обжора, a glutton (*man or woman*).

брюзга, a grumbler.

плакса, a weeper.

ворожей, a fortune-teller.

поруча, a surety.

выскочка, an upstart.

пустомеля, a chatterer.

встрепана, a volatile person.

пьяница, a drunkard.

гуляка, a lazy person.

разиня, a loiterer.

дбка, a clever fellow.

ровня, a person of the same age.

забияка, a squabbler.

рубака, a slasher.

заика, a stutterer.

самоучка, a self-taught person.

звѣрка, a ninny, a cockney.

святоса, a bigoted person.

кривошея, a wryneck.

сирота, an orphan.

лакомка, a dainty person.

тѣзка, a namesake.

лѣвшя, a left-handed person.

убийца, a murderer or murderess.

мотыга, a prodigal person.

умница, a clever person.

невѣжда, an ignorant person.

ханжа, a hypocrite.

5. The genders of words signifying relationship, as also the names of animals, are distinguished in various ways. Sometimes by the employment of different words; e. g. *отецъ*, the father, and *мать*, the mother; *сынъ*, the son, and *дочь*, the daughter; *братъ*, the brother; and *сестра*, the sister; *быкъ*, the bull, and *корова*, the cow; *петухъ*, the cock, and *курица*, the hen; *баранъ*, the ram, and *овца*, the sheep, &c. Sometimes the same word and the same gender are applied to both sexes; e. g. *другъ*, a friend; *врагъ*, an enemy; *товарищъ*, a companion; *дитя*, a child (male and female); *особа*, a person; occasionally the same word is used but with common gender, as has already been said. Usually however masculine nouns, if used to designate feminine objects, change their termination. In these, which are called *movable nouns* (*двѣжимыя*), for the masculine ending

are substituted the feminine terminations: *а, я, ка, овка, ица, ица, ница, иня, ша*, and some others, the preceding consonant being at the same time often changed, as is seen in the following examples:

кумъ, godfather; кумá, godmother.  
 павлинь, peacock; павá, peahen.  
 господи́нь, master; госпожа́, mistress.  
 тестъ, father-in-law; теща́, mother-in-law.  
 дуракъ; ду́ра, a fool, *m.* and *f.*  
 козёлъ, a he-goat; коза́, a she-goat.  
 гость; го́стья, a guest, *m.* and *f.*  
 игу́менъ, an abbot; игу́меня, an abbess.  
 лгунъ; лгу́ня, a liar, *m.* and *f.*  
 сосѣдъ; сосѣ́дка, a neighbour, *m.* and *f.*  
 слуга́, man-servant; -жа́нка, maid-servant.  
 пасту́хъ, shepherd; -у́шка, shepherdess.  
 крестя́нинъ; крестя́нка, peasant, *m.* and *f.*  
 самѣцъ, a male; самка́, a female.  
 хозя́инъ, host; хозяйка́, hostess.  
 жи́дъ, a Jew; жидовка́, a Jewess.  
 чи́жъ, siskin; чижёвка́, hen-siskin.  
 щего́ль, a beau; щеголи́ха, a belle.  
 по́варъ, a cook; повариха́, a cook-maid.

шутъ; шутóвка, a buffoon, *m.* and *f.*  
 левъ, a lion; лави́ца, a lioness.  
 импера́торъ, emperor; -патри́ца, empress.  
 жрецъ, priest; жри́ца, priestess.  
 карла́; карли́ца, a dwarf, *m.* and *f.*  
 жи́тель; жи́тельница, inhabitant, *m.* and *f.*  
 мона́хъ, a monk; мона́хия, a nun.  
 князь, prince; кня́гиня, princess.  
 геро́й, hero; геро́иня, heroine.  
 богъ, a god; бо́гиня, a goddess.  
 графъ, count; гра́финя, countess.  
 опеку́нъ; опеку́ница, a guardian, *m.* and *f.*  
 велика́нь, giant; велика́нша, giantess.  
 коро́ль, king; короле́ва, queen.  
 баро́нъ, baron; баронесса́, baroness.  
 госуда́рь; госуда́рыня, sovereign, *m.* and *f.*  
 стари́къ, an old man; стару́ха, an old woman.  
 швецъ, sempster; швей, sempstress.  
 свѣ́коръ, father-in-law; свекро́вь, mother-in-law.

It remains to be observed that in professional names the Russian language makes a distinction between the name of the wife of a professional man, and the name of a woman who, herself, exercises a profession; e.g. инспе́ктри́ца, *inspectress*, and инспе́кторша, *wife of an inspector*; лека́рка, *a woman who practices medicine*, and лека́рша, *wife of a doctor*; двѣ́рница, *a female door-keeper*, and двѣ́рничиха, *wife of a door-keeper*; учи́тельница, *schoolmistress*; and учи́тельша, *wife of a schoolmaster* (from инспе́кторъ, лека́рь, двѣ́рникъ and учи́тель).

Aspects.

24.—Objects may present themselves to us in different forms, as greater or less, prettier or uglier, than ordinary; and the Russian language has different inflections to express these *aspects*.

1. The *augmentative* nouns (увеличительныя), which terminate in the masculine in *ище, ина*; in the neuter in *ище*, and in the feminine in *ища*, represent the object in a magnified form, at the same time adding the idea of ugliness or deformity; e. g. *мужичище, a great clownish peasant*; *дурачина, a great blockhead*; *лицеище, great face*; *лапища, a great paw* (from *мужикъ, дуракъ, лице* and *лапа*).

2. The *diminutive* nouns (уменьшительныя), which present the object diminished in size, end, in the masculine in *икъ, окъ, екъ, ецъ, якъ*; in the neuter in *ко, це*, and in the feminine in *ка, ца*, e. g. *столѣкъ, little table*; *червякъ, little worm*; *заводець, little manufactory*; *деревицѣ, little tree*; *ручка, little hand*; *вещица, little thing* (from *столъ, червь, заводъ, дерево, рука* and *вещь*). From these diminutives others again are formed, as: *столѣчекъ, червячекъ, ручечка, вещичка*.

Besides these diminutives, which lessen the force of the primitives, and which may be termed *physical* diminutives, there are further: a) diminutives of tenderness, friendship, or in one word, of feeling, which terminate in *ушка, юшка, енѣка*, as: *батьюшка, dear father*; *матушка, dear mother*; *маменька, dear mamma* (from *батьа, мать* and *мама*); and b) diminutives of contempt or slight, presenting the object in an unfavourable point of view; these terminate in *ушко, ушка, енка*, e. g. *домишко, a miserable little house*; *лошадѣнка, a miserable little horse*.

Christian names admit also diminutives, both in a favourable and unfavourable sense; thus *Иванъ,*

*John*; Пётръ, *Peter*; Сергѣй, *Sergius*, become as diminutives of feeling Вѣня, Пѣтя, Серёжа, and as diminutives of contempt Вѣнька, Пѣтька, Серёжка. These diminutives, by which the primitive nouns are limited and changed, can only be learned by practice.

The diminutives properly so called, which indicate the smallness of objects, are very commonly employed in Russian, while diminutives of feeling and contempt are seldom used except in familiar language. The same remark applies equally to the augmentatives.

Numbers. 25.—In Russian, as in English, there are two numbers; the *singular* (единственное число), as: столъ, *the table*; книга, *a book*; окно, *the window*; and the *plural* (множественное), as: столы, *the tables*; книги, *books*; окна, *the windows*.

The Slavonian, like the Greek, has a third number, the *dual* (двойственное), which has been retained in certain Russian inflections, as will subsequently be seen.

Some substantives are only used in the *singular*; such are most proper names, and the names of material and abstract objects; e. g. серебрó, *silver*; я́сность, *evidence*; любóвь, *love*. Others are only used in the *plural*; the following are of this class.

*Masculine gender.*

квасцы, alum.  
люди, people.  
обои, tapestry.  
опилки, saw-dust.  
очки, spectacles.  
прогоны, post-fare.  
пяльцы, a sewing-frame.  
судки, a cruet stand.  
тиски, a press.  
щипцы, snuffers.

*Neuter gender.*

бѣлыя, white lead.  
ворота, yard-gate.  
дрова, fire-wood.  
крѣсла, an arm-chair.  
перѣла, a balustrade.  
письмена, letters.  
рамена, shoulders.  
уста, mouth.  
чернила, ink.  
чресла, the loins.

*Feminine gender.*

бпрѣлки, the needle game.  
имянины, a name-day.  
ножницы, scissors.  
оковы, fetters, chains.  
отруби, bran.  
родины, delivery.  
рыль, a hurdy-gurdy.  
сани, sledge.  
сумерки, dawn.  
сутки, day (24 hours).

Some names of towns are only used in the plural; such are: Бѣльцы, Вязники, Крестцы, of the *masculine gender*, and Броницы, Холмогоры, and the foreign names: Аѣны, *Athens*; Яссы, *Iassy*; Ёйвы, *Thebes*, of the *feminine gender*.



26.—The *cases* are different inflections which nouns assume to indicate the mutual relation of objects. The English language has strictly speaking but one case, the genitive; the mutual relation of words being indicated either by a preposition or by the position of words in a phrase. In the Russian language there are seven cases, which may be known, in the names of animate beings, by putting the questions: *кто, кого, кому, кого, кѣмъ, о комъ?* and in the names of inanimate objects by the questions: *что, чего, чему, что, чѣмъ, о чѣмъ?* These are:

1. The *nominative* (именительный падежъ), which gives the name of an object in a phrase in answer to the question *кто* or *что?* e. g.

*Кто учится?* Ученикъ. Who studies? The scholar.  
*Что предъ нимъ лежитъ?* What is before him? A book.  
 Книга.

2. The *genitive* (родительный), which indicates possession, and which answers to the question *кого* or *чего?* and also *чей, чья, чѣ?* In English this case is expressed by the preposition *of*, or by an apostrophic *s*; e. g.

Хозяинъ (чего?) дома. The master (of what?) of the house.  
 Домъ (чей?) соседа. The house (of whom?) of the neighbour.  
 Слушайся (кого?) матери. Obey (whom?) thy mother.

3. The *dative* (дательный), which designates the person or thing to which an object relates, and answers to the question *кому* or *чему?* In English the dative is usually indicated by the preposition *to*; e. g.

Кому́ слѣдуетъ сія награда? To whom does this recompense come? To the scholar.  
Ученику́.

Чему́ ты обрадовался? Кни́гу. With what were you delighted?  
With a book.

4. The *accusative* (вѣщательный), which commonly called in English grammars the *objective*, answers to the question *кого́* or *что́*? e. g.

Кого́ ты хва́лишь? Ученика́. Whom do you praise? The scholar.  
Что́ ты купи́лъ? Кни́гу. What have you bought? A book.

5. The *vocative* (звѣательный), which expresses the name of the person or object addressed; e. g.

Учени́къ, будь приле́женъ! Scholar, be attentive!  
Бо́же, спаси́ Царя́! God, save the Emperor!

6. The *instrumental* (творительный) or *causative*, which designates the means or cause, and answers to the question *къмъ́* or *чѣмъ́*? In English the prepositions *with* and *by* are commonly used for this purpose; e. g.

Къ́мъ́ дово́льны? Ученико́мъ. With whom is one satisfied?  
With the scholar.

Чѣ́мъ́ онъ забавля́ется? Кни́- With what does he amuses him-  
гою. self? With a book.

7. The *prepositional* (предложный) or *locative*, which answers to the questions *о́ комъ́* or *о́ чѣмъ́*? *въ́ комъ́* or *въ́ чѣмъ́*? &c. This case, which in ecclesiastical Slavonian is called *narrative* (сказа́тельный), is termed in Russian *prepositional*, because it is always accompanied by one of the prepositions *въ́*, *in*; *на́*, *on*; *о́* or *объ́*, *of*; *по́*, *after*; *при́*, *near* *то́*; e. g.

О́ комъ́ гово́рять? Объ́ уче- Of whom do they speak? Of  
никъ́. the scholar.

Въ́ чѣ́мъ́ ты нахо́дишь удово́ль- In what do you find pleasure?  
ствіе́? Въ́ кни́гу. In a book.

Two of these seven casual inflections, the *nominative* and *vocative*, are called *direct* cases (прямые), because they simply give the name of the object; the remaining five are termed *oblique* (косвенные).

27.—The change of the inflections in nouns, showing the numbers and cases, is called *declension* (склонение), and substantives are divided, according to the manner in which they are declined, into *regular* and *irregular*.

28.—Regular substantives, according to their termination, have three declensions: the *first* for nouns with the *masculine termination*, (ъ, и, ѣ); the *second* for those with the *neuter termination* (о, е, я), and the *third* for those with the *feminine termination* (а, я, ѣ). Each of these declensions has three inflections, one *hard*, and two *soft*, as exhibited in the table below. The two following observations relative to this subject are important.

1. The *vocative* is always like the *nominative*, except in the words Богъ, *God*; Господь, *Lord*; Иисусъ, *Jesus*; Христосъ, *Christ*; Отецъ, *Father*, which, in an invocation of the Deity, preserve the Slavonian inflection; Боже, Господи, Иисусе, Христэ, Отче.

2.—The *accusative, singular* of masculine nouns in the two first declensions, and *plural* in all three, is like the *nominative* when the noun designates an inanimate or abstract object, and like the *genitive* in the names of animate beings.

Masculine nouns, ending in *атель* and *тель*, and designating inanimate agents, such as знаменатель, *the denominator*; делитель, *the divisor* (in arithmetic), are declined like the names of animate beings, and consequently their accusative is like the

genitive. The same is the case with the names of inanimate objects which have been borrowed from animate, as: *спутникъ*, a *satellite* (of a planet). The word *идолъ*, *idol*, has its accusative like the genitive, whilst in its synonyms *кумиръ* and *истуканъ*, the accusative is like the nominative. The word *лице*, signifying *the face* and *an individual*, is used in both its meanings like the name of an inanimate object, its accusative being always the same as the nominative.

The collective nouns are always declined like the names of inanimate objects, though signifying a collection of animate beings, such as *народъ*, a *nation*; *войско*, an *army*; *стадо*, a *herd*.

DECLENSIONS OF REGULAR SUBSTANTIVES.										
SINGULAR.	CASES.	FIRST.			SECOND.			THIRD.		
		MASC. TERMINATION.			NEUTER TERMINATION.			FEM. TERMINATION.		
		Hard inf.	Soft inf.		Hard inf.	Soft inf.		Hard inf.	Soft inf.	
N.		ъ	й	ь	о	е	мя	а	я	ь
G.		а	я	я	а	я	ени	ы	и	и
D.		у	ю	ю	у	ю	ени	ѣ	ѣ (и)	и
A.		... like the <i>Nominative</i> or the <i>Genitive</i> ....						у	ю	ь
V.		..... like the <i>Nominative</i> .....								
I.		омъ	емъ	емъ	омъ	емъ	енемъ	ою (ой)	ею (ей)	ію (ію)
P.		ѣ	ѣ (и)	ѣ	ѣ	ѣ (и)	ени	ѣ	ѣ (и)	и
PLURAL.	N.	ы	и	и	а	я	мена	ы	и	и
	G.	овъ (ей)	евъ	ей	ѣ	ей (й, ій)	ени	ѣ (ей)	ѣ (й, ій)	ей
	D.	амъ	ямъ	ямъ	амъ	ямъ	енамъ	амъ	ямъ	ямъ
	A.	..... like the <i>Nominative</i> or the <i>Genitive</i> .....								
	V.	..... like the <i>Nominative</i> .....								
	P.	амн	ямн	ямн	амн	ямн	енамн	амн	ямн	ямн
		ахъ	яхъ	яхъ	ахъ	яхъ	енахъ	ахъ	яхъ	яхъ

Rules of the declensions.

29.—In declining the regular nouns, certain rules are to be observed, some of which are *general*, being common to all the three declensions, while others are *special*, being confined to one of the declensions or one of the inflections.

1. According to what has already been observed (§ 18) relative to the permutation of letters, *a*) the vowel *u*, of the *genitive singular* and *nominative plural*, is changed for *u* after the guttural and hissing consonants (r, k, x; ж, ч, ш, щ); *b*) the vowel *o*, when without accent, of the *instrumental singular* and *genitive plural*, is changed for *e* after the lingual and hissing consonants (л; ж, ч, ш, щ), observing however that after the lingual (л) the vowel *o* may be used if it is accented; *c*) the vowel *o* of the *dative* and *prepositional singular* is changed for *u* after the vowel *i* (in nouns in *iŭ*, *ie* and *iŭ*). (See the paradigms 2, 3, 8, 16, 20, 21, 26).

General rules.

2. A great number of nouns elide in the *other cases* (excepting in the *instrumental singular* of feminine nouns in *b*) the vowel *e* or *o*, inserted in the termination of the *nominative singular*; but we must observe that in this elision the vowel *e* is changed for *o* after the consonant *л*, and for *ŭ* after a vowel. (See paradigms 2, 4, 10, 28).

3. In such nouns of the II and III declension as have two consonants before the final vowel, the vowel *o* or *e* is usually inserted between the two consonants in the *genitive plural*; in such cases however the *e* is always substituted for the semi-vowels *o* and *ŭ*. (See paradigms 12, 13, 20, 23).

4. The *genitive plural* has some particular inflections: the inflection *ŭ* (instead of *oŭ* and *ŭ*) is peculiar to nouns in *оу*, *ѣу*, *иѣу*, *ѣа*, to those in *оа*, *ѣа*, *ѣа*, preceded by another consonant, and to those in *оѣ* and in *ѣѣ*; the inflection *ŭ* to nouns in *е* and *ѣ* preceded by a vowel, and the inflection *iŭ* to nouns in *ѣѣ* and *ѣѣ*, contracted from *ie* and *iŭ*. (See paradigms 3, 16, 21, 24, 25, 26).

5. Such nouns as are only used in the *plural*, are declined according to the paradigm to which, by their termination, they belong. Thus among the *masculine* nouns, *хоробы*, *edifice*, is declined according to the 1st paradigm (*законы*); *щипцы*, *snuffers*, according to the 2d (*отцы*); *обои*, *tapestry*, according to the 6th (*герои*); *люди*, *men* (*instr.* *людьми*), according to the 9th (*хоромы*); among the *neuter* nouns, *дрова*, *firewood*, according to the 11th (*слова*); *крѣсла*, *arm-chair* (*gen.* *крѣселъ*), according to the 12th (*стѣкла*); *письмена*, *letters*, according to the 18th (*времена*); among the *feminine* nouns, *оковы*, *chains*, according

to the 19th (коровы); носилки, *a hand-barrow* (gen. носилокъ), according to the 20th (пѣлки); сани, *a sledge*, and рыль, *a hurdy-gurdy*, according to the 27th (страсть).

6. *Foreign nouns*, whether common or proper, ending in *з, ѣ, в; а, я, б*, are declined like Russian nouns with the same terminations, whilst those in *е, и, о, у* and *ю*, are indeclinable. The same is the case with family names of females, whatever may be their termination. Thus *омнибусъ, an omnibus; Лондонъ, London*, are declined according to the 1st paradigm (законъ); *конвоѣ, a convoy; Барклэй, Barclay*, according to the 6th (герой); *вандевиль, a vauclville; Брюссель, Bruxelles*, according to the 19th (король); *мѣса, a piece*, (of music, &c.); *Петрарка, Petrarch*, according to the 19th (корова); *колѣнія, a colony*, according to the 26th (молнія); *гавань f. a haven*, according to the 27th (страсть). But *кофе, coffee; колибри, a humming-bird; депѣ, depot* (military); *рандеву, a rendez-vous; ревию, a review; Кастельре, Castlereagh; Морѣ, Moreau*, are indeclinable. The same is the case with the feminine family names; as *Жаннѣсъ, Сталь, &c.*; thus we say: *у Госпожи Жаннѣсъ, at the house of Mrs Genlis; сочинѣніе Госпожи Сталь, the work of Mrs Staël.*

Special  
rules.

1. Nouns ending in *ѣнокъ*, signifying the young ones of animals, are masculine in the singular; but in the plural they preserve the Slavonian inflection *ята* or *ата*, and are neuter. (See paradigm 4).

2. Nouns ending in *янинъ* or *анинъ* and in *яринъ* or *аринъ*, have peculiar inflections in the plural. (See paradigm 5).

3. In the *instrumental singular* of the III declension, *ою* is contracted in *оѣ, ею* in *еѣ*, and *ію* in *іѣ*; thus we say: *рукѣю* or *рукѣѣ, with the hand; землѣю* or *землѣѣ, by the earth*. (See paradigm 28). In the same manner the *instrumental plural* *ями* of some nouns in *ѣ* is contracted in *ѣми*, the accent being in such cases placed on the last syllable; thus we say: *людѣми, with men; дверьми, by gates; лошадейми, with horses* (and not *людѣми, дверьми, лошадейми*).

4. The *genitive singular* of masculine nouns in *з, в, ѣ*, signifying divisible matter, often takes, especially in familiar language, the inflection *у* and *ю* of the dative (instead of *а* and *я*); thus we say: *фунтъ сахару, a pound of sugar; ложка дѣгтю, a spoonful of tar; чашка чаю, a cup of tea*. The same

inflection (instead of *н*) is also found in the *prepositional singular*, accompanied with the preposition *въ* or *на*, in some nouns in *з* and *щ*, and in such cases takes the tonic accent; thus we say: *въ саду́*, in the garden; *на краю́*, on the brink.

5. In *compound substantives*, the first word is also declined, if in its junction with the second it has preserved the termination of its nominative singular; thus *Ца́рьгра́дъ*, *Constantinople*, is declined according to the 9th and the 1st paradigm: *Г. Ца́рьгра́да*, *Д. Ца́рюгра́ду*, *И. Ца́ремъгра́домъ*, *Р. о Ца́рьгра́дъ*. With respect to the names of towns compounded of the adjectives *новъ* and *бѣлъ*, as *Ново́городъ*, *Бѣло́озеро*, and to the common nouns formed of the numeral *полъ*, the half: as: *по́лдень*, *midday*; *по́лгода*, *half a year*, we refer the student to our remarks on that subject in the declension of the adjectives and numerals.

30.—By observing the above general and special rules we shall be able to decline all the regular nouns of the Russian language according to the following 28 paradigms.

Paradigms of the declensions of substantives.

According to the 1st paradigm (зако́нъ) are declined nouns in *з* (with the exception of those which belong to the 4 following paradigms), remembering however to change *и* into *у* after the gutturals (*г*, *к*, *х*), and *о* into *е* after the lingual (*ц*), and observing further, that several nouns of the 1st declension throw the accent on the inflections of the cases, some commencing with the genitive singular, others with the nominative plural, and others again with the genitive plural. Such are:

Ба́рянь, the ram. *Г. ба́рына*.  
Верте́нь, the cavern, верте́на.  
Ку́миръ, an idol, ку́мира.  
Волхв́ъ, the magician, волхв́а.  
Враѓъ, the enemy, враѓа.  
Язы́къ, the tongue, язы́ка.  
Пѣту́хъ, a cock, пѣту́ха.  
Мѣся́цъ, a month, мѣся́ца.  
Кузне́цъ, the blacksmith, кузне́ца.

Дар́ъ, the gift, *Г. дара́*; *Н. пл. дары́*.  
Долѓъ, the debt, долга́; долги́.  
Чин́ъ, a rank, чина́; чины́.  
Шар́ъ, a ball, шара́; шары́.  
Боѓъ, a god; *Н. пл. бо́га*, *Г. богóвъ*.  
Вор́ъ, a robber; во́ры, воро́въ.  
Гроб́ъ, a coffin; грóбы, гробóвъ.  
Дуб́ъ, an oak; ду́бы, дубóвъ.  
Волќъ, the wolf; во́лки, волко́въ.

According to the 2d paradigm (оте́цъ) are declined the nouns in which the vowel *е* or *о* of the nominative is elided in the other cases, observing at the same time the change of *е* into *ь* after the consonant *л*, and into *й* after a vowel. Such are:

PARADIGMS OF THE THREE DECLENSIONS						
S I N G U						
DECLENSIONS:	TERMINATIONS:		<i>Nominat. and Vocat.</i>	<i>Genitive.</i>	<i>Dat.</i>	<i>Accus.</i>
FIRST.	Ъ	1.	закѡнъ, the law . . .	закѡн-а . . .	у . . .	у . . .
		2.	отѣцъ, the father . . .	отц-а . . .	у . . .	у . . .
		3.	шалашъ, a cabin . . .	шалаш-а . . .	у . . .	у . . .
		4.	телѣнокъ, a calf . . .	телѣнк-а . . .	у . . .	у . . .
		5.	дворянинъ, a gentleman . . .	дворян-а . . .	у . . .	у . . .
		6.	геройъ, the hero . . .	геро-а . . .	ю . . .	ю . . .
		7.	соловейъ, a nightingale . . .	солов-ѣй . . .	ю . . .	ю . . .
		8.	гѣній, a genius . . .	гѣн-я . . .	ю . . .	ю . . .
		9.	король, the king . . .	коро-л-ѣй . . .	ю . . .	ю . . .
		10.	огонь, the fire . . .	огн-ѣй . . .	ю . . .	ю . . .
SECOND.	О	11.	слово, a word . . .	слов-а . . .	у . . .	у . . .
		12.	стекло, the glass . . .	стекл-а . . .	у . . .	у . . .
		13.	кольцо, small ring . . .	колѣчк-а . . .	у . . .	у . . .
		14.	море, the sea . . .	мор-я . . .	ю . . .	ю . . .
	Е	15.	ружьѣ, a gun . . .	руж-ѣй . . .	ю . . .	ю . . .
		16.	мнѣнiе, an opinion . . .	мнѣн-я . . .	ю . . .	ю . . .
		17.	дѣтище, i. e. a great child . . .	дѣтич-а . . .	у . . .	у . . .
		18.	время, the time . . .	врем-ени . . .	ени . . .	ени . . .
THIRD.	А	19.	коровѣ, a cow . . .	коров-ѣй . . .	ѣ . . .	у . . .
		20.	пѣлака, a stick . . .	пѣлк-ѣй . . .	ѣ . . .	у . . .
		21.	возжѣ, a bridle . . .	возж-ѣй . . .	ѣ . . .	у . . .
		22.	недѣля, the week . . .	недѣл-ѣй . . .	ѣ . . .	ю . . .
	И	23.	пѣсня, a song . . .	пѣсн-ѣй . . .	ѣ . . .	ю . . .
		24.	свѣя, a pile . . .	свѣ-ѣй . . .	ѣ . . .	ю . . .
		25.	судья, the judge . . .	суд-ѣй . . .	ѣ . . .	ю . . .
		26.	молнiя, a lightning . . .	молн-ѣй . . .	ѣ . . .	ю . . .
	Ь	27.	страсть, a passion . . .	страст-ѣй . . .	ѣ . . .	ю . . .
		28.	ложь, the lie . . .	лж-ѣй . . .	ѣ . . .	ю . . .

{ the *Nom.*, in the names of inanimate beings,  
the *Gen.*, in the masc. names of animate beings,  
like

With respect to the use of the *tonic accent* in the declensions, the following rules are to be observed.

1. Nouns of the 1st declension commonly preserve through all the cases both of the singular and plural, the accent of the nominative singular. But most polysyllabic nouns, the termination of which is accented, transfer the accent to the inflection of the genitive, and keep it on this syllable through all the other cases. Several monosyllables follow the same rule. Other monosyllables preserve the nominative accent in the singular, but in the plural they transfer it to the inflections of the cases, some in all the cases, others from the genitive downwards.

2. In the 2d declension, the accent serves to distinguish the nominative plural from the genitive singular. On this account, those nouns which in



## SIONS OF REGULAR SUBSTANTIVES.

I. A R.			P L U R A L.		
<i>Instrum. Prep.</i>			<i>Nom. and Voc. Genitive. Dative. Accus. Instrum. Prepos.</i>		
.омъ . . ѣ . .	законъ-мъ . . .	овъ . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣмъ . . ѣ . .	отцъ-мъ . . .	ѣвъ . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣмъ . . ѣ . .	шалашъ-мъ . . .	ей . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.омъ . . ѣ . .	теплъ-мъ . . .	тъ . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.омъ . . ѣ . .	дворъ-мъ . . .	въ . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣмъ . . ѣ . .	геро-мъ . . .	евъ . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣмъ . . ѣ . .	солов-мъ . . .	ѣвъ . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣмъ . . ѣ . .	гѣмъ-мъ . . .	евъ . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣмъ . . ѣ . .	коро-мъ . . .	ей . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣмъ . . ѣ . .	огнъ-мъ . . .	ей . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.омъ . . ѣ . .	словъ-мъ . . .	тъ . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.омъ . . ѣ . .	стѣнъ-мъ . . .	стѣнъ-мъ . . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.омъ . . ѣ . .	колѣчъ-мъ . . .	колѣчъ-мъ . . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣмъ . . ѣ . .	моръ-мъ . . .	ей . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣмъ . . ѣ . .	ружъ-мъ . . .	ей . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣмъ . . ѣ . .	мнѣмъ-мъ . . .	мъ . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣмъ . . ѣ . .	дѣтѣмъ-мъ . . .	мъ . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣмъ . . ѣ . .	времъ-мъ . . .	мъ . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ою . . ѣ . .	корѣ-мъ . . .	тъ . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ою . . ѣ . .	пѣлкъ-мъ . . .	пѣлокъ-мъ . . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣю . . ѣ . .	возжъ-мъ . . .	ей . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣю . . ѣ . .	недѣ-мъ . . .	мъ . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣю . . ѣ . .	пѣснъ-мъ . . .	пѣсенъ-мъ . . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣю . . ѣ . .	свѣ-мъ . . .	мъ . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣю . . ѣ . .	судъ-мъ . . .	ей . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣю . . ѣ . .	молнъ-мъ . . .	мъ . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.ѣю . . ѣ . .	страстъ-мъ . . .	ей . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .
.лѣжью . . лжи	лжъ-мъ . . .	ей . . амъ . .	. . .	. . .	. . .

singular have the accent on the first syllable, transfer it in the plural to the last; while, on the contrary, those which in the singular have the accent on the last syllable, transfer it in the plural to the first, and keep it on that syllable through all the cases, both of the singular and plural.

3. In the IIIrd declension a distinction between the genitive singular and nominative plural only takes place in such nouns in *a* and *я*, as have the accent on the termination. These nouns transfer the accent to the first syllable in the nominative plural, resuming in all the other cases the accent of the singular. Some of these nouns have also in the accusative singular the accent on the first syllable. Among the nouns in *ъ*, there are several which transfer the accent to the inflections on the cases, from the genitive plural downwards.—The examples to these different rules here follow.

Орѣлъ, an eagle, *О. орѣл*.  
 Ковѣръ, a carpet, *коврѣ*.  
 Крючѣкъ, a hook, *крючкѣ*.  
 Левъ, a lion, *льва*.  
 Кулѣкъ, a sack, *кулькѣ*.  
 Племъ, the elm-tree, *плѣмѣ*.  
 Конѣкъ, a skate, *конькѣ*.  
 Боецъ, a wrestler, *бойца*.  
 Заяцъ (and зайцъ), a hare, *зайца*.  
 Опоѣкъ, a calf's skin, *опойка*.

Барѣръ, a hook, *О. баррѣ*.  
 Посѣлъ, an ambassador, *посѣлѣ*.  
 Лобъ, the forehead, *лоба*.  
 Псалѣмъ, a psalm, *псалмѣ*.  
 Ротъ, the mouth, *рта*.  
 Учѣстокъ, a portion, *учѣстка*.  
 Сонъ, sleep, *сна*.  
 Уголъ, an angle, *угла*.  
 Замокъ, a castle, *зѣмка*.  
 Замѣкъ, a lock, *замкѣ*.

According to the 3d paradigm (*палашъ*) are declined such nouns in *ъ* with a hissing consonant (*ж, ч, ш, щ*), as form the *genitive plural* in *ей*; such are:

Надѣжъ, the case, *О. надежѣ*.  
 Платѣжъ, the payment, *платежѣ*.  
 Моржъ, a walrus, *моржѣ*.  
 Ежъ, a hedgehog, *ежѣ*.  
 Ключъ, the key, *ключѣ*.  
 Лучъ, a ray, *лучѣ*.  
 Кирпичъ, a brick, *кирпичѣ*.  
 Мечъ, a sword, *мечѣ*.

Палашъ, the sabre, *О. палашѣ*.  
 Ландишъ, the mayflower, *ландиши*.  
 Карандашъ, a pencil, *карандашѣ*.  
 Торгашъ, the mercer, *торгашѣ*.  
 Плащъ, a mantle, *плащѣ*.  
 Лещъ, the bream, *лещѣ*.  
 Товарищъ, a comrade, *товарища*.  
 Овоцъ, a fruit, *овоща*.

According to the 4th paradigm (*теленокъ*) are declined the names of the young of animals, ending in *енокъ*, which, having retained in the plural the Slavonian inflection *ята* (or *ата* after *ю* and *у*), are neuter and consequently belong, in the singular to the 1st declension, and in the plural to the 2d. Some of these nouns however form their plural regularly in *енки*. Such are:

Ягѣнокъ, a lamb; *Я. ягнѣта*.  
 Жеребѣнокъ, a foal; *жеребѣта*.  
 Цыплѣнокъ, a pullet; *цыплѣта*.

Ослѣнокъ, a young ass; *Я. ослѣта*.  
 Волчѣнокъ, a wolf's cub; *волчѣта*.  
 Медвѣжѣнокъ, a bear's cub; *медвѣжѣта*.

Поросѣнокъ, a little pig; *поросѣта*.

Львѣнокъ, a lion's whelp; *Я. львѣнки*.

Котѣнокъ, a kitten; *котѣта*.

Галчѣнокъ, a young awl; *галчѣнки*.

Ребѣнокъ, a child; *ребѣта*.

Мышѣнокъ, a young mouse; *мышѣнки*.

Also *щенѣкъ*, a *риф*, *О. щенкѣ*, *Я. щенѣта* and *щенки*.

According to the 5th paradigm (*дворянинъ*) are declined nouns in *инъ*, *анинъ*, *яринъ* and *аринъ*, which in the *plural* change *инъ* into *е, ѣ, амѣ*, &c.; such are:

Селянинъ, a villager; *Я. селяне*.  
 Крестянинъ, a peasant; *крестяне*.

Мирянинъ, a layman; *Я. миряне*.  
 Поселянинъ, a husbandman; *поселяне*.

Семьянинъ, the head of a family; <i>N. pl.</i> семьяне.	Огнѣщанинъ, a freeman; <i>N. pl.</i> огнѣщане.
Россианинъ, a Russian; Россiяне.	Христiанинъ, a Christian; христiане.
Гражданинъ, a citizen; гражда́не.	Бояринъ, a lord; бояре.
Мѣщанинъ, a burgher; мѣщане.	Болгаринъ, a Bulgarian; Болгаре.

According to the 6th paradigm (герои) are declined the nouns in *и*, with the exception of those in *иѣ* and of some in *ей*, which belong to the two following paradigms. Such are:

Покѣй, a room, <i>G.</i> покѣа.	Лишай, a scab, <i>G.</i> лишай.
Злодѣй, a wretch, злодѣа.	Най, a part, най.
Казначей, a treasurer, казначеа.	Бой, the combat, <i>G.</i> боа; <i>N. pl.</i> бои.
Сараи, a coach-house, сараа.	Рой, a swarm, роа; рои.
Слѣчай, the occasion, слѣчаа.	Строй, the rank, строа; строи.
Налѣа, a desk, налѣа.	Чай, the tea, чаа; чай.

According to the 7th paradigm (словѣи) are declined eight nouns in *ей*, as change the *e* of the nominative into *ѣ* in all the other cases. Some Christian names in *иѣ*, in familiar language, are declined in the same manner. Such are:

Воробѣй, a sparrow, <i>G.</i> воробѣа.	Чирей, a furuncle, <i>G.</i> чирѣа.
Муравѣй, an ant, муравѣа.	Василѣй, Basil, Васильа.
Ручѣй, a brook, ручѣа.	Григорѣй, Gregory, Григорѣа.
Репѣй, a little ribbon, репѣа.	Левонтѣй, Leontius, Левонтѣа.
Улей, a bee-hive, ѹлѣа.	Проксѣй, Procorpius, Проксѣа.
Жеребѣй, the lot, жеребѣа.	Игнатѣй, Ignatius, Игнатѣа.

According to the 8th paradigm (рѣниѣ) are declined such nouns in *иѣ*, as take the inflection *и* (instead of *ѣ*) in the *prepositional singular*; such are:

Викариѣй, a vicar, <i>G.</i> викариа.	Виночѣрниѣй, a cup-bearer, <i>G.</i> виночѣрниа.
Инвентариѣй, an inventory, инвентариа.	Меркурѣй, Mercury, Меркурѣа.
Комментарѣй, a commentary, -ментарѣа.	Сергиѣй, Sergius, Сергиа.

Some substantives in *и*, as портной, a tailor; кормчий, the pilot, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like the adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 9th paradigm (корѣи) are declined the masculine nouns in *ѣ*, with the exception of those which belong to the following paradigm. Such are:

Жѣлудѣй, an acorn, <i>G.</i> жѣлудѣа.	Госудѣй, a sovereign, <i>G.</i> госудѣа.
Колѣдезь, a well, колѣдеза.	Олѣнь, a stag, олѣна.
Учѣтель, the teacher, учѣтелеа.	Медвѣдь, a bear, медвѣдяа.
Сѣбѣль, a sable, сѣбѣляа.	Царѣй, a king, царѣа.
Слѣсарѣй, a lock-smith, слѣсарѣа.	Корабѣль, a vessel, корабѣляа.

Фонарь, a lantern, *G.* фонаря. Голубь, a pigeon; голуби, голубей.  
 Фитиль, a match, фитиля. Зверь, a beast; зверя, зверей.  
 Гусь, a goose; *N. pl.* гусей, *G.* гусей. Червь, a worm; черви, червей.

According to the 10th paradigm (огóнь) are declined such masculine nouns in *o*, as elide the vowel *e* or *o* in all the other cases; such are:

Камень, a stone, <i>G.</i> камня.	Корень, the root; <i>N. pl.</i> корни, <i>G.</i> корней.
Стебель, a stem, стебля.	
Лапоть, a bast shoe, лаптя.	Угорь, an eel; угри, угрей.
Ремёнь, a thong, ремня.	Ноготь, a nail; ногти, ногтей.
Кремень, a flint, кремня.	Коготь, a claw; когти, когтей.
Ломоть, a slice, ломтя.	Перстень, a ring; перстни, перстней.
	Локоть, the elbow; локти, локтей.

In the list of masculine nouns in *o*, given in § 23, which elide the vowel *e* or *o* of the nominative, this vowel is printed in *italics*.

Second declension.

According to the 11th paradigm (слóво) are declined the nouns in *o*, and those in *ye*, *же*, *че* and *ше* (with the exception of such as belong to the following paradigm, of the diminutives in *ко* and *ше* and augmentatives in *ше*), observing however the change of *o* into *e* after the hissing consonants and the lingual (ж, ч, ш, ц), and remarking that several nouns of the 11d declension transfer in the plural the accent from the first syllable to the last, and *vice versa*. Such are:

Тѣло, the body, <i>G.</i> тѣла; <i>N. pl.</i> тѣла.	Лицѣ, the face, <i>G.</i> лицѣ; <i>N. pl.</i> лица.
Стадо, a herd, стада; стада,	Яйцѣ, an egg, яйцѣ; яйца ( <i>G.</i> яицѣ).
Зеркало, a mirror, зеркала; зеркала.	Плечѣ, the shoulder, плечѣ; плеча.
Озеро, a lake, озера; озера.	Ложѣ, the couch, <i>G.</i> and <i>N. pl.</i> ложа.
Вино, the wine, вина; вина.	Вѣче, an assembly, вѣча.
Село, a village, села; села.	Жилище, a dwelling, жилища.
Колесо, a wheel, колеса; колеса.	Зрѣлище, a spectacle, зрѣлища.
Долото, a chisel, долота; долота.	Сокровище, a treasure, сокровища.
Чѣдо, <i>n.</i> a child, <i>G.</i> and <i>N. pl.</i> чѣда.	Гульбище, a promenade, гульбища.
Свѣтло, a star, свѣтила.	Училище, a school, училища.
Мѣняло, <i>m.</i> a changer, мѣняла.	Кладбище, a cemetery, кладбища.

According to the 12th paradigm (стеклó) are declined those nouns in *o* and *e*, preceded by two consonants, which usually insert the vowel *e* or *o* in the *genitive plural*, observing at the same time that the nouns in *ye* take the vowel *e*, and that the semi-vowel *o* between the two consonants is changed into *e*. Such are:

Ребро, a rib; <i>N. pl.</i> ребра, <i>G.</i> реберъ.	Щемло, a vice, <i>N. pl.</i> щемла, <i>G.</i> щемлѣ.
Пятно, a spot; пятна, пятенъ.	Сукно, cloth; сукна, суконъ.
Зерно, a grain; зёрна, зёрнъ.	Окно, the window; окна, оконъ.

Брёвна, a beam; *N. pl.* брёвна, *G.* Числа, a number; *N. pl.* числа, *G.* брёвенъ. чиселъ (and чиселъ).

Письма, a letter; письма, писемъ. Сердце, the heart; сердца, сердецъ.

Полотно, linen; полотна, полотенъ. Кольца, a ring; кольца, колецъ.

Сёдло, a saddle; сѣла, сѣлѣтъ. Крыльцо, a step; крыльца, крылецъ.

It is necessary to observe that in nouns in *здо*, *сто*, *ско* and *ство*, the genitive plural is formed without the insertion of any letter; e. g. ГНѢЗДО, a nest; МѢСТО, a place; ВОЙСКО, an army; ЧУВСТВО, the feeling,—*gen. plur.* ГНѢЗДЪ, МѢСТЪ, ВОЙСКЪ, ЧУВСТВЪ.

According to the 13th paradigm (КОЛѢЧКО) are declined the diminutives in *ко* and *це*, which form their *nominative plural* in *и* (for those in *ко*) or in *ы* (for those in *це*), inserting the vowel *e* in the genitive plural. Such are:

Сердечко, little heart; *pl.* сердечки, Дноце, little bottom; *pl.* донци,  
-дечекъ. [-дечекъ. донецъ.

Мѣстечко, little place; мѣстечки, Дульце, mouth piece; дульцы,

Крылышко, little wing; крылышки, дутецъ.

-лышекъ. Рыльце, little snout; рыльцы, рылецъ.

Домикъ, little house; домишки, Полотенце, a towel; полотёнцы,

-мишекъ. -тенецъ.

According to the 14th paradigm (МОРЕ) are declined those nouns in *ле* and *ре*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ей*; e. g.

Поле, the field; *G.* поля, *N. pl.* поля, *G.* полей.

Горе, a grief; рѡра (not used in the *plural*).

According to the 15th paradigm (РУЖЬЕ) are declined those nouns in *е* and in *ее*, which change in the *genitive plural*, *е* and *ее* into *ей*, and *е*, a contraction of *е*, into *ий*. Such are:

Жилъе, a floor; *pl.* жилъя, *G.* жилей. Платье, a coat, *G. pl.* платьей.

Копье, a lance; копья, копей. Верховье, a spring, верховей.

Питье, a beverage; питья, питей. Веселье, an enjoyment, веселій.

Лезвье, the edge; лезвья, лезвей. Воскресенье, Sunday, воскресеній.

Острей, the point, edge; острия, острий. Повѣрье, a belief, повѣрій.

The following nouns in *е* form their *genitive plural* in *есть*: ПОДМАСТѢРЬЕ *m.*, the journeyman; КУШАНЬЕ, a dish; ПОМѢСТЬЕ, a domain; УСТЬЕ, mouth (of a river); ВАРѢНЬЕ, a preserve.

According to the 16th paradigm (МНѢНІЕ) are declined nouns in *іе*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ій*, and which in the *prepositional singular* take the inflection *и* (instead of *ю*). In

these nouns the accent of the nominative plural is the same as that of the genitive singular. Such are:

Здѣніе, an edifice, <i>G.</i> and <i>N. pl.</i> зданія.	Оръіе, an arm, <i>G.</i> and <i>N. pl.</i> оружія.
Знаніе, knowledge, знанія.	Явленіе, an apparition, явленія. [нія.]
Желаніе, the desire, желанія.	Сообщеніе, a communication, сообще-
Повѣіе, an idea, повѣія.	Сомнѣіе, the doubt, сомнѣія.
Собраніе, an assembly, собранія.	Владѣіе, the possession, владѣія.
Растеніе, a plant, растенія.	Созвѣздіе, a constellation, созвѣздія.

According to the 17th paradigm (дѣтнще) are declined the augmentative nouns, which form their plural in *и, ей, &c.*; e. g.

Доміще, great house; <i>pl.</i> доміщи.	Століще, great table; <i>pl.</i> століщи, -щей.
Дворіще, great court, дворищи.	Козліще, <i>m.</i> great he-goat; козліщи.
Мужичіще, <i>m.</i> big peasant; мужичищи.	Поконіще, great room; поконіщи.

Some substantives in *ое*, as *животное, an animal*; *мороженое, ice-creams*, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like the adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 18th paradigm (врѣмя) are declined nouns in *мя*. In the plural the accent is transferred to the last syllable. Such are:

Брѣмя, the burden, <i>N. pl.</i> бремена.	Плѣмя, the race, <i>N. pl.</i> племена.
Вымя, an udder, вымена.	Стрѣмя, the stirrup, стремѣна.
Имя, the name, имена.	Тѣмя, the sinciput, тѣменѣ.
Пламя, the flame ( <i>no plural</i> ).	Знамя, the flag, знаменѣ and знамена.

By the same paradigm is declined *сѣмя, seed, plur. сѣменѣ*, which however has retained in the genitive plural the Slavonian inflection *сѣмянѣ* (instead of *сѣменѣ*), to be distinguished from the proper name *Семѣнѣ, Simeon*.

Third declension

According to the 19th paradigm (короба) are declined the nouns in *а* (excepting such as belong to the two following paradigms). It is necessary to observe the change of *ы* into *и* after the guttural and hissing consonants (г, к, х; ж, ч, ш), and of *о* into *е* after the hissings and the lingual (ж, ч, ш; ц), and also to remark that several nouns of the IIIrd declension in *а* and *я* transfer the accent in the nominative plural, and some of them also in the accusative singular, from the last syllable to the first. Such are:

Рѣба, the fish, <i>G. and N. pl. рѣбы.</i>	Звѣзда, a star, <i>G. звѣзды; N. pl. звѣзды.</i>
Шляпа, a hat, шляпы.	Жена, the wife, жены; жёны.
Побѣда, victory, победы.	Слуга, a servant, слуги; слуги.
Рѣза, a rose, розы.	Рѣка, a river, рѣки; рѣки.
Книга, a book, книги.	Вода, water, <i>G. воды; A. воду; N. pl. воды.</i>
Собака, a dog, собаки.	Зима, winter, зимы, зиму; зимы.
Муха, a fly, мухи.	Рука, the hand, руки, руку; руки.
Кожа, the skin, кожи.	Голова, the head, головы, голову;
Туча, the cloud, тучи.	голови.
Груша, a pear, груши.	Скворода, a frying pan, сквороду,
Вдова, a widow, <i>G. вдовы; N. pl. вдовы.</i>	роды.

According to the 20th paradigm (пѣлка) are declined most nouns in *a* preceded by two consonants, or by one consonant and *o* or *й*, which insert the vowel *e* or *o* in the *genitive plural*, *o* and *й* then changing into *e*. Such are:

Ложка, the spoon, <i>G. pl. ложекъ.</i>	Койма, the hem, <i>G. pl. коёмъ.</i>
Сосна, the fir, сосенъ.	Копѣйка, a copeck; копѣекъ.
Сѣзакъ, a tale; сѣзакъ.	Рѣшъ, a ship's yard; рѣшъ.
Шалка, a cup; шалокъ.	Свадьба, the marriage; свадьбъ.
Утка, a duck; утокъ.	Судьба, fate; <i>N. pl. судьбы; G. судьбъ.</i>
Овца, a sheep; <i>A. овцу; G. pl. овецъ.</i>	Тюрьма, the prison; тюрьмы, тюремъ.
Доска, a plank; доску, досокъ.	Серьга, an ear-ring; серьги, серёгъ.

The vowels *o* or *e* are inserted solely to facilitate the pronunciation; for if the two or three consonants in juxta-position can be articulated without difficulty, the insertion does not take place. Thus: *просьба, the demand; староста, a bailiff; верста, a verst; жертва, a victim*, form their *genitive plural*: *просьбъ, старостъ, верстъ, жертвъ*. The *genitive plural* of *война, war*, is *войнъ*, and that of *тайна, a sacrament*, is *таинъ*.

According to the 21th paradigm (возжѣ) are declined nouns in *жа, ча, ша*, preceded by a consonant, as also those in *ща*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ей*. Such are:

Ханжа, a bigot, <i>G. pl. ханжѣй.</i>	Лѣвшѣ, a left-handed person; <i>G. pl.</i>
Парча, brocade; парчѣй.	Вѣкша, a squirrel; вѣкшей. [лѣвшѣй.
Прѣтча, a proverb; прѣтчей.	Рѣща, a grove; рѣщей.
Каланча, a belfry; каланчѣй.	Тѣмща, the thickness; тѣмщей.

In the same manner are declined *юноша, young man*, and *паша, a pasha*, *G. pl. юношей* and *пашѣй*.

According to the 22th paradigm (недѣля) are declined nouns in *я*, preceded by a consonant, which form their *genitive plural*

in *б*, with the exception of some which form it in *ей*, and others in *в* and *ей*. Such are:

Баня, the bath; *G. pl.* бань.  
 Пуля, a ball; пуль.  
 Буря, a tempest; бурь.  
 Гиря, a weight; гирь.  
 Дыня, a melon; дынь.  
 Богиня, a goddess; богинь.  
 Пустыня, a desert; пустынь.  
 Потеря, a loss; потерь.

Дядя, the uncle; *G. pl.* дядей.  
 Бронея, a cuirass; брони.  
 Пень, a pine; пеней.  
 Ноздря, a nostril; ноздрей.  
 Стезя, a footpath; стезей.  
 Доля, a portion; долей and доль.  
 Заря, the dawn; зарей and зарь.  
 Тоня, fishing-net; тоней and тонь.

According to the 23th paradigm (нѣсны) are declined the nouns in *ля* and *ня*, preceded by another consonant, by *в* or by *ѣ*, which insert in the *genitive plural* the vowel *е* (one single noun takes the vowel *о*), or change *в* and *ѣ* into *е*. Such are:

Сабля, a sabre; *G. pl.* сабель.  
 Басня, a fable; басень.  
 Башня, a tower; башень.  
 Деревня, a village; деревень.  
 Крыля, a roof; крове.  
 Петля, a running-knot; петель.  
 Земля, the earth; земле (A. S. землю).

Обѣдя, the mass; *G. pl.* обѣдъ.  
 Кухня, the kitchen; кухню.  
 Спальня, a dormitory; спалень. [ленъ.  
 Богатѣля, an almshouse; богатѣ-  
 Шальня, a sewing room; швальень.  
 Бѣня, a slaughter-house; ббень.  
 Водопоилы, a horse-pond; водопоень.

The substantive земля takes, in the prepositional singular with *на*, the Slavonian inflection *на землѣ*, *on the earth*, to be distinguished for *на землѣ*, *on the ground*.

According to the 24th paradigm (свѣя) are declined those nouns in *я* preceded by a vowel (with the exception of those in *ія*), which form their *genitive plural* in *ѣ*; such are:

Вѣя, the neck; *G. pl.* вѣй.  
 Ядвѣя, the hip; ядвѣй.  
 Струя, a current; струй.  
 Верѣя, a post; верей.  
 Шея, the neck; шей.  
 Змѣя, a serpent; змей.  
 Соѣя, the jay; сой.  
 Сбруя, an armour; сбруй.

The names of foreign towns, ending in *оа* and *уа*, are declined in the same manner, except in the *accusative*, which they form in *у* (and not in *ю*); e. g. Гѣнуа, Genoa, А. Гѣнуу. Мѣнтуа, Mantua, Мѣнтуу. Пѣдуа, Padua, Пѣдуу. Гоа, Goa, Гѣу.

Some nouns in *ая* and *ня*, as: кладовѣя, a storehouse; передняя, an antechamber, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 25th paradigm (судѣя) are declined the nouns in *ѣя*, which in the *genitive plural* change this termination into *ей*, and if it is contracted from *ія*, into *ій*. Such are:



Ладьѣ, a boat; *G. пл. ладѣй.*

Скамьи, a bench; *скамѣй.*

Статьѣ, an article; *статѣй.*

Свиньи, a pig; *свинѣй.*

Семьи, the family; *семѣй.*

Гостьѣ, a female guest; *G. пл. гостѣй.*

Лгунья, a female liar; *лгунѣй.*

Святѣ, a female relation; *святѣй.*

Кельѣ, a cell; *келѣй.*

Игуменьѣ, an abbess; *игуменѣй.*

According to the 26th paradigm (мѡнѣя) are declined the nouns in *я*, which in the *dative* and *prepositional singular* take the inflection *у* (instead of *ю*), and which form their *genitive plural* in *ѣй*. Such are:

Армія, an army, *D. арміи; G. пл. стѣхія*, an element, *D. стѣхи; G. пл. арміѣй.*

Комѣя, a soru, *кѡмѣи; кѡмѣѣй.*

Лѣя, a lily, *лѣи; лѣѣй.*

Лѣя, a line, *лѣи; лѣѣй.*

Комѣя, a comedy, *комѣди; комѣѣй.*

Трагѣя, a tragedy, *трагѣди; трагѣѣй.*

Витѣ, an orator, *витѣи; витѣѣй.*

According to the 27th paradigm (страѣя) are declined the feminine nouns in *ѣ*, observing at the same time the change of *я* into *ѣ* after the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ), and remarking that several of these nouns transfer in the plural the accent to the casual inflections, from the genitive plural downwards. Such are:

Ткань, a tissue; *G. пл. ткѣнѣй.*

Печатѣ, a seal; *печатѣй.*

Кроватѣ, a bedstead; *кроватѣй.*

Ель, a fir; *елѣй.*

Свирѣль, a pipe; *свирѣлѣй.*

Ладѡнь, the palm of the hand; *ладѡнѣй.*

Осенѣ, the autumn; *осенѣй.*

Мечѣть, a mosque; *мечѣтѣй.*

Болѣзнь, a malady; *болѣзнѣй.*

Добрѡдѣтель, virtue; *добрѡдѣтелѣй.*

Бровь, an eyebrow; *N. пл. брѡви, G. бровѣй.*

Кустѣ, a tuft; *кустѣи, кустѣѣй.*

Вѣтвь, a branch; *вѣтви, вѣтвѣй.*

Дверь, the door; *дверѣй (I. дверѣмѣй).*

Лошадѣ, a horse; *лошадѣй (I. дѣмѣй).*

Плетѣ, a whip; *плетѣй (I. плетѣмѣй).*

Ночь, the night, *ночѣй; D. ночѣмѣй.*

Печѣ, a stove, *печѣй; печѣмѣй.*

Мышь, a mouse, *мышѣй; мышѣмѣй.*

Вещѣ, a thing, *вещѣй; вещѣмѣй.*

According to the 28th paradigm (ложѣ) are declined five nouns in *ѣ*, which elide the vowel *о* of the nominative in the other cases, except in the instrumental singular; these are:

Вошь, a louse, *G. вши, I. вошью.*

Рожь, rue, *ржѣ, рѡжѣю.*

Любѡвь, love, *G. любѡвѣй, I. любѡвью.*

Цѣрковь, the church, *цѣркѣи, цѣркѡвью.*

The noun цѣрковь takes, in the *dative*, *instrumental* and *prepositional plural*, the hard inflection *амѣ, ами, ахѣ*: цѣркѣамѣ, цѣркѣами, о цѣркѣахѣ. Любѡвь, used as a Christian name, retains the vowel through all the cases, *G. Любѡви, ѣс.*

Irregular  
nouns.

31. — The *irregular* nouns are such as take in some cases an inflection different to what they ought to have, according to the termination of their nominative singular; or such as form their plural in a particular manner.

1. Several nouns in *ъ* and *ь* take in the *nominative plural* the inflection *ѣ*, *ѣ*, with the tonic accent (instead of *ы*, *у*), while the genitive remains in *овъ*, *евъ*, *ей*, and the other cases regular. Such are:

Бѣрегъ, the shore, <i>pl.</i> берега, береговъ.	Погребъ, a cellar, <i>pl.</i> погреба, -бѣвъ.
Бокъ, the flank, бока.	Пологъ, a curtain, пологи.
Вѣчеръ, the evening, вечера.	Профессоръ, a professor, профессора.
Голосъ, the voice, голоса.	Рукавъ, a sleeve, рукава.
Городъ, the town, города.	Флюгеръ, a weather-cock, флюгера.
Докторъ, a doctor, докторъ.	Шомполъ, a ramrod, шомпола.
Жерновъ, a millstone, жернова.	Хлѣвъ, a stall, хлѣва.
Катеръ, a cutter, катера.	Холодъ, the cold, холода.
Киверъ, a shako, кивера.	Сторожъ, a guard, сторожа, сторожей.
Колоколъ, a bell, колокола.	Вексель, a bill of exchange, -ля, -лей.
Кучеръ, a coachman, кучера.	Вензель, a monogram, вензеля.
Лугъ, a meadow, луга.	Егеръ, a hunter, егеря.
Лѣсъ, a forest, лѣса.	Крендель, a cracknel, кренделя.
Мастеръ, a master, мастера.	Лекарь, a surgeon, лекаря.
Мичманъ, a midshipman, мичмана.	Писаръ, a writer, писаря.
Островъ, an island, острова.	Флигель, wing of a house, флигеля.
Парусъ, a sail, паруса.	Штемпель, a stamp, штемпеля.
Поваръ, a cook, повара.	Якоръ, an anchor, якоря.

In the same manner тетеревъ, a grouse, has in *N.* *pl.* тетерева; but in the genitive тетереваѣ (instead of *тетеребѣвъ*).

2. Some nouns in *ъ*, *ь*, *о*, form their *plural* in *ья*, *евья*, *ьямъ*, &c., changing the gutturals *з* and *к* before *ь* into *ж* and *ч*. Such are:

Братъ, the brother, <i>pl.</i> братья, -евъ.	Прутъ, a twig, <i>pl.</i> прутья, прутьевъ.
Брусъ, a beam, брусья.	Полосъ, a slide, полосы.
Клинь, a wedge, клинья.	Стулъ, a chair, стулья.
Клокъ, a lock, клоки.	Зять, son-in-law, зятья.
Колосъ, an ear, колосья.	Звенъ, a link, звенья.
Колъ, a stake, колья.	Крыло, a wing, крылья.
Комъ, a heap, комя.	Перъ, a feather, перья.
Копыль, a sledge-bar, копылья.	Полѣно, a billet of wood, полѣнья.
Кочанъ, a head of cabbage, кочанья.	Помелъ, a malkin, помелья.
Лубъ, a sheet of bark, лубья.	Шило, an awl, шилья.

3. Some nouns in *ъ* have their *genitive plural* like the nominative singular (instead of *овъ*), e. g.

Алтынъ, three corecks: <i>pl.</i> алтыны,	Рекрутъ, a recruit: <i>pl.</i> рекруты, рекрутъ.
Алтынъ, a boot; сапоги, сапогъ.	
Аршинъ, an ell; аршины, аршинъ.	Солдатъ, a soldier; солдаты, солдатъ.
Гренадеръ, a grenadier: гренадеры,	Турокъ, a Turk; Турки, Турокъ.
лёръ.	Уланъ, a hulan; уланы, уланъ.
Драгунъ, a dragoon; драгуны, драгуна.	Цыганъ, a gipsy; цыганы, цыганъ.
Пудъ, a pood; пуды, пудъ.	Чулкъ, a stocking; чулки, чулкъ.
Разъ, a time; разы, разъ.	Грузинъ, a Georgian; Грузины, Грузинъ.

We can however say regularly *пять пудовъ, five poods*; *нѣсколько рекрутовъ, some recruits*. The substantive *человѣкъ, man*, has also the genitive plural like the nominative singular, but only in junction with a numeral, as *пять человекъ, five men*; in all other cases it is regular; e. g. *друзьяи человекоев, the friends of the men* — The substantive *сажень, a wise*, has likewise in the genitive plural *саженъ*, the accent being transposed; and *день, the day*, in familiar language, takes the same inflection when in junction with a numeral; e. g. *семь дней, seven days* (instead of *семь дней*).

4. The following nouns form their *plural* in different ways.

Глазъ, the eye, { have *а, з, амъ, &c.*: глаза, глазъ, глазамъ; волосъ, a hair, { волосъ, волосамъ (and also regularly: волосы).

Баринъ, a lord, { change *инъ* into *а, з, амъ, ами, ага*: бара, баръ, барамъ; баринъ, master, { барамъ; господи, господи, господамъ; Татаринъ, a Tartar, { Татари, Татари, Татари, &c.

Хозяинъ, a housekeeper, *plur.* хозяйева, хозяйевъ, хозяйевамъ, &c.

Шуринъ, a brother-in-law, *plur.* шурья, шурьевъ, шурьямъ, &c.

Другъ, a friend, { have their plural in *я, ей, ямъ, &c.* (другъ changes *з* into *з*): друзья, друзей, друзьямъ; князь, князей; Мужъ, a husband, { мужья, мужей, &c. The latter, in the sense of *man*, is regular: мужи, мужей, мужамъ, &c.

Кумъ, a godfather. { form their plural in the same way by inserting the syllable *овъ*: кумовья, кумовей; сватовья, сватовей; Сватъ, a kinsman, { сыновья, сыновей, &c. Сынъ, with a *figurative* meaning, is regular: сыны, сыновъ, &c.

Сосѣдъ, a neighbour, { take in the plural the soft inflection *и, ей, ямъ, &c.*: сосѣди, сосѣдей, сосѣдямъ (and also regular: сосѣды, сосѣдовъ); Холѣи, a bondman, { холѣи, холѣей; Чертъ, the devil, { черти, чертей, чертамъ, &c.

Солнце, the sun, { take the masculine termination: *и, евъ, амъ, or и, овъ, амъ, &c.*: солнцы, солнцевъ; Облако, a cloud, { облака, облакъ; Очкъ, a rip, point { очки, очковъ; Ушко, a handle, { ушки, ушковъ, ушкамъ, &c.

Вѣко, the eyelid, { form their plural in *и, з, амъ, &c.*: вѣки, вѣкъ, вѣкамъ; Яблоко, an apple, { яблоки, яблокъ (and яблоковъ), яблокамъ, &c.

Небо, heaven, Чудо, a wonder.	{ have in the plural: небеса, небесъ, небесамъ; чудеса, чудесъ, чудесамъ. &c. Небо, in the sense of <i>palace</i> , has no plural, and чудо, signifying a <i>monster</i> , is regular: чуда, чудъ, чудамъ, &c.
Око, the eye, Ухо, the ear.	{ form their plural in <i>и, ей, амъ</i> , with the permutation of the consonant: очи, очей, очамъ, очамъ; уши, ушей, ушамъ, ушамъ (instead of <i>ушамъ</i> ). This inflection is properly the Slavonian dual; the plural, which is sometimes used in poetry, is: очеса, ушеса
Дитя, a child,	{ which in the singular has preserved the Slavonian declension: <i>G. D. and P. дитяти, I. дитятемъ and дитятею</i> , has in plural: <i>N. дѣти, G. and A. дѣтей, D. дѣтямъ, I. дѣтьми, P. о дѣтахъ</i> .

Курьца, a hen, *plur.* кѹры, куръ, кѹрамъ, &c.

Слѣпа, the slaver, *plur.* слѣпыи, слѣпѣй, слѣпѣямъ, &c., with the soft inflection.

5. Some nouns have a double inflection in the *plural*, the one regular, the other irregular.

a) Some have two inflections in the nominative only, and without any difference in the meaning of the word; such are:

Вѣкъ, an age, <i>pl.</i> вѣки and вѣка, вѣковъ.	Поясъ, girdle, <i>pl.</i> поясы and пояса, -совъ.
Годъ, a year, годы and года, годовъ.	Рогъ, a horn, роги and рога, роговъ.
Домъ, a house, дома and дома, домовъ.	Снѣгъ, snow, снѣги and снѣга, снѣговъ.
Корпусъ, body, корпуса and корпуса, -совъ.	Столъ, a stack, столы and столы, столѣвъ.
Куполовъ, cupola, куполы and куполы, -ловъ.	Стругъ, a bark, струги and струги, -говъ. [-мовъ.
Мѣдъ, honey, мѣды and мѣда, медѣвъ.	Тѣремъ, a room, тѣремы and тѣрема, -овъ.
Окорокъ, a ham, окороки and окорока, -овъ.	Край, the brink, край and край, краѣвъ.

b) Others have two inflections through all the cases, the irregular inflection being used where the substantive has a collective meaning; such are:

Батога, a stick, <i>pl.</i> батогы, батоговъ, and батожья, батожьевъ, &c.
Внукъ, the grandson; внуки, внуковъ, and внучата, внучать, &c.
Крюкъ, a hook; крюки, крюковъ, and крючья, крючьевъ.
Ободъ, a felloe; ободы, ободовъ, and ободья, ободьевъ.
Лоскутъ, a shred; лоскуты, лоскутовъ, and лоскутья, лоскутьевъ.
Струпъ, a scurf; струны, струновъ, and струнья, струньевъ.
Сукъ, a branch; сѹвы, сѹковъ, and сѹчья, сѹчевъ.
Черепъ, a potsherd; черепы, череповъ, and черепья, черепьевъ.
Волдырь, <i>m.</i> a tubercle; волдыри, волдырей, and волдыря, волдырьевъ.
Камень, <i>m.</i> a stone; камни, камней, and камѣня, камѣньевъ.

Корень, *m.* a root: корни, корней, and коренья, кореньевъ.  
 Пузырь, *m.* a bladder: пузыри, пузырей, and пузыря, пузырьевъ.  
 Пупырь, *m.* a pimple: пупыри, пупырей, and пупыря, пупырьевъ.  
 Уголь, *m.* the charcoal: угли, углей, and уголья, угольевъ.  
 Дерево, a tree: деревья, деревь, and деревья, деревьевъ.  
 Дыра, a hole: дыры, дырь, and дыря, дырьевъ.  
 Щель, *f.* a chink: щели, щелей, and щельевъ.

c) Others again have two inflections with totally different meanings; such are:

Зубъ, a tooth (in the mouth), *pl.* зубы, зубовъ, and tooth (of a saw), зубья, зубьевъ.

Капля, a drop (of water), капли, капель, and drops (in medicine), капли, каплей.

Листъ, a leaf (of paper), листы, листовъ, and a leaf (of a tree), листья, листьевъ.

Мужъ, a man, мужи, мужей, and a husband, мужья, мужей.

Мехъ, a fur, мехи, меховъ, and a pair of bellows, меха, меховъ.

Образъ, the form, образы, образовъ, and an image, образа, образовъ.

Поводъ, a motive, поводы, поводовъ, and a vein, поводи, поводиьевъ.

Судно, a vessel (utensil), судны, судень, and a vessel (ship), суда, судовъ.

Хлебъ, a bread, хлеба, хлебовъ, and a corn, хлеба, хлебьевъ.

Цветъ, a flower, цветы, цветовъ, and a colour, цвета, цветовъ.

d) Lastly there is one substantive which in the plural has three inflections, a different meaning being conveyed by each; viz.

Колѣно, { a tribe, *pl.* колѣна, колѣтъ, колѣнамъ, &c.  
 the knee, *pl.* колѣни, колѣней, колѣнямъ, &c.  
 a joint (of a plant), *pl.* колѣнья, колѣньевъ, колѣньямъ, &c.

6. The declension of the following nouns is quite irregular:

Господь, the Lord, { is declined like a noun in з, with the hard inflection:  
*G.* Господа, *D.* Господу, *I.* Господомъ; the vocative  
 is: Господи.

Христосъ, Christ, { cuts off in all the other cases the syllable *ос*: *G.* Христа,  
*D.* Христу, *I.* Христомъ, *P.* о Христѣ, *V.* Христѣ.

Дочь, a daughter, { insert in the inflections of the cases the syllable *ер*:  
 Мать, the mother, { *G.* and *D.* дочери и матери, *I.* дочерью и матерью;  
*plur. N.* дочери и матери, *G.* дочерей и матерей,  
*I.* дочерями и матерями, &c.

{ although masculine, take in the *genitive*, *dative* and  
*prepositional* singular the feminine inflection *и*: пламени,  
 Пламень, flame, пути; but the instrumental case is regular (пламенемъ,  
 Путь, the way, путёмъ).

# EXERCISES IN THE DECLENSION OF SUBSTANTIVES.

Nominative and Genitive. The master of the garden and the mistress of the house.  
Хозяинъ садъ и хозяйка домъ.

The garden of the master and the house of the mistress.  
Садъ хозяинъ и домъ хозяйка.

The roaring of the lions; the song of the nightingale; the  
Рыканіе левъ; пѣніе соловѣй;

bellowing of the bull, of the ox and of the cow; the neighing  
мычаніе быкъ, волъ и корова; ржаніе

of the horses; the barking of the dog; the cooing of the pigeons;  
лошадь f; лай собака; воркованіе голубъ m;

the cawing of the crows; the croaking of the frogs; the howling  
карканіе воронъ; кваканіе лягушка; вой

of the wolf; the buzzing of the bees, of the cock-chafers and  
волокъ; жужжаніе пчела, жукъ и

of the flies; the bleating of the rams and of the ewes. A chimney  
муха; блеяніе баранъ и овца. Каминъ

without fire; windows without panes; groats without butter;  
безъ огонь m; окно безъ стекло; каша безъ масло;

saddles without stirrups; a charge without ball; islands and  
седло безъ стремя; зарядъ безъ пуля; островъ и

meadows without trees; cooks, coachmen and labourers without  
лугъ безъ дерево; поваръ, кучеръ и работникъ безъ

work; children without mother; soldiers without muskets;  
работа; дитя безъ мать; солдатъ безъ ружьё;

muskets without flints; a statue without arms and without  
ружьё безъ кремёнь m; статуя безъ рука и безъ

ears; young bears and young lions without hair; vessels  
ухо; медвѣженокъ и львенокъ безъ шерсть f; корабль m

without hammocks; ships without oars; tea without sugar and  
безъ койка; судно безъ весло; чай безъ сахаръ и

without cream. A bunch of pens; a dozen of cups, of plates  
безъ сливки *f*. Пукъ перо; дюжина чашка, тарелка

and of glasses; five scores of trouts; half a score of melons;  
и стаканы; сотня форель *f*; десяток дыня;

a quantity of geese, of ducks and of swans; herds of cattle;  
множество гусь *m*, утка и лебедь *m*; стадо скотъ;

studs of horses. The men of antiquity, and the husbands  
табуны лошадей *f*. Мужъ древность и мужъ

of the wives. The flowers of the gardens and the colours  
женъ. Цветъ садъ и цветъ

of the rainbow. The leaves of paper and the leaves of the trees.  
радуга. Листъ бумага и листъ дерево.

The teeth of the mouth and the teeth of a comb. The tribes  
Зубъ во (*prop.*) ротъ и зубъ у гребень *m*. Колѣно

of the Israelites, the knees of a man, and the joints of plants.  
Израильянинъ, колѣно у человѣкъ, и колѣно растеніе.

The taking of herrings on the coasts of America has been very  
ловъ сельдь *f* у берегъ Америка былъ очень

profitable to the English, the Swedes, the Dutch and  
выгоденъ для (*gen.*) Англичанинъ, Шведъ, Голландецъ и

the French.

Французъ.

Advice to friends. Glory to God. Woe to the enemies. Nominative  
Советъ другъ. Слава Богъ. Горе врагъ. and Dative.

The general order to the troops. Obedience to the laws. Give  
Приказъ войско. Повиновеніе законъ. Дай

food to the geese, to the hens, to the pigeons and to the  
естъ гусь *m*, курица, голубъ *m* и

little dogs. To act conformably to the laws of honour.  
щенокъ. Поступать соотвѣтственно правило честь.

To live according to his situation. A law given as well  
Жить прилично состояніе. Законъ, данный какъ

for the nobles as for the citizens. To be against the wishes дворянинъ, такъ и мещанинъ. Противиться желаніе of the children, and the desire of the parents. The books, дитя, и воля родитель. Книга, the pens and the papers belong to the scholars, and not перо и тетрадь принадлежатъ ученикъ, а не to the masters. The fields and the meadows belong to the учитель. Поле и лугъ принадлежатъ father and to the mother, and the gardens, as well as the forests отецъ и мать, а садъ, какъ и лѣсъ, to the sons and to the daughters. To be agreeable to the men сынъ и дочь. Правиться мужчина and to be disagreeable to the women. The verdure is agreeable и не правиться женщина. Зелень правится to the eyes. The pictures please the sisters and the flowers глазъ. Картина правятся сестра, а цвѣтъ the brothers. Useful to the country; agreeable to God and братъ. Полезный отечество; пріятный Богъ и to men; faithful to the sovereign; dear to friends; agreeable люди; вѣрный государь; любезный другъ; милый to children. Man is known by his face, by his voice, by дитя. Человѣкъ узнаётся по лицѣ, по голосъ, по his figure, by his walk and by the motions of his body. Tourists ростъ, по походка и по тѣлодвиженіе. Туристъ travel in Switzerland, in France, in Italy, in Germany, путешествуютъ по Швейцарія, Франція, Италія, Германія, in America and in Егупт. Америка а Египеть.

Nominative	The brothers have bought houses, gardens, a village and
and	
Accusative.	Братъ купили домъ, садъ, деревня и
	fields, and have sold oxen, cows, horses and a carriage.
	поле, а продали быкъ, корова, лошадь, и карета.



To read a fable, draw a picture, write letters, play an air,  
 Читать басня, рисовать картина, писать письмо, играть пѣсня,

mend pens. To visit the brothers and the sisters, the mothers  
 чинить перо. Посыщать братья и сестра, мать

and the daughters, the fathers and the sons. To buy a hat  
 и дочь, отец и сын. Купить шляпа

and a cap, gloves and shoes, stockings and garters.  
 и шапка, перчатка и башмакъ, чулок и подвязка.

The conqueror has vanquished the troops and has subjected  
 Завоеватель побѣдил войско, и покорилъ

the people. Peter defeated the Swedes, conquered Esthonia  
 народъ. Петръ разбилъ Шведъ, завоевалъ Эстляндия

and Livonia, founded the city of Saint-Petersburg, and civilised  
 и Лифляндия, основалъ городъ Санктпетербургъ, и просвѣтилъ

Russia. The Russians have conquered the Tartars, the Turks,  
 Россія. Россіянинъ побѣждалъ Татаринъ, Турокъ,

the Swedes, the French and the Persian. The rains refresh  
 Шведъ, Французъ и Персiянинъ. Дождь *m* освѣжаютъ

the earth, and the frosts destroy the grass-hoppers.  
 земля, и холодъ истребляютъ саранча (*sing.*).

Children, be attentive! John, come here! Soldiers, Vocative.

Дитя, будьте прилежны! Иванъ, прійди сюда! Воинъ,

fight valiantly! God, preserve the Emperor! Lord,  
 сражайтесь храбро! Богъ, спаси (*acc.*) Царь! Господь,

have mercy upon me!

помилуй меня!

The scholars write with a slate-pencil or with a pen and Nominative  
 Ученикъ пишутъ грифель *m* или перо и <sup>and Instru-</sup> mental.

ink. John plays with Alexis and with Basil, and Mary

чернила *pl.* Иванъ играетъ съ Алексѣй и съ Василій, а Марья

plays with Sophia and with Amy. A tart with almonds;

играетъ съ Софья и съ Любѡвъ. Пирогъ съ миндаль *m*;

pots with flowers; a basin of water; a man of wit and  
горшóкъ съ цвѣтъ; кáдка съ водá; челоуѣкъ съ умъ и  
of genius; a gallery of pictures. Towns with a fortress and  
съ гѣніи; галерѣя съ картiна. Гóродъ съ кремль и  
a port; trees with leaves, flowers and fruits; shakos with  
гáвань; дѣрево съ листь, цвѣтъ и плодъ; кiверъ съ  
plumes; a room with doors; bread with salt; water with  
султáнъ; кóмната съ дверь; хлѣбъ съ соль; водá съ  
wine; wine with water; professors with pupils; a letter with  
винó; винó съ водá; профессоръ съ ученикъ; писемó съ  
money. To draw with a pencil, to paint with a brush and  
дѣньги. Рисовáть карандашъ, писáть кисть и  
colours. The shop-keeper trades in tallow, in soap, in milk,  
краска. Купецъ торгуетъ салó, мыло, молоко,  
in flour, in groats, in wines, in beer, in cloth, in linen and  
мукá, крупá, винó, пиво, сукно, полотно и  
in laces, and the neighbours of the shop-keeper trade in oxen,  
кружево, а сосѣдъ купецъ торгуютъ волъ,  
in sheep and in horses. Palaces with towers; churches with  
барáнъ и лошадъ. Дворецъ съ башня; цѣрковь съ  
steeple; houses with windows; buildings with galleries,  
колокóльня; домъ съ окно; здáніе съ галерѣя;  
regiments with colours. The mountains abound in gold,  
полкъ съ знамя. Горá изобилуютъ золото,  
in silver, in copper, in iron, in quick-silver and in lead.  
серебрó, мѣдъ, желѣзо, ртуть и свинѣцъ.

Nominative  
and Prepo-  
sitional.

The fables of the bull and the ram, of the ass and the  
Бáсня о быкъ и барáнъ, объ осѣль и  
nightingale; of the cicada and the ant; of the oak and  
соловѣй; о кузнечикъ и муравѣй; о дубъ и  
the reed; of the fox and the crow; of the wolf and the lamb.  
тростникъ; о лисица и воронъ; о волкъ и агнѣнокъ.

The tales of the guardian-angel, of John and Mary; the  
Сказка объ ангелъ-хранитель, объ Иванъ и Мάρья;

histories of Sergius the hermit; of the hero and the genius.  
повѣсть о Сѣргіи пустынникъ; о героѣ и гѣніи.

To speak of games, of lessons, of the time, of the place, of  
Говорить объ игра, объ урокъ, о время, о мѣсто, объ  
circumstances. In the work there is said a great deal about  
обстоятельство. Въ сочинѣніе говорить много о

honour and infamy, about virtue and vice, about courage  
честь и безчестье, о добродѣтель и порокъ, о храбрость  
and pusillanimity. In the water live the fishes, the frogs and  
и малодушіе. Въ водѣ живутъ рыба, лягушка и  
the mollusca; and in the forests live the lions, the bears,  
слизень *m*; и въ лѣсъ живутъ левъ, медвѣдь *m*,  
the foxes and the hares.  
лисица и заяць.

The books of the scholar please the master. The light The different cases.  
Книга ученикъ нравятся (*dat.*) учитель. Свѣтъ

of the sun illumines the earth with its rays. The colours of  
солнце озаряетъ земля лучъ. Цвѣтъ

the rose are agreeable to the eyes. The friends of humanity  
роза (*суть*) приятны глазъ. Другъ человѣчество

do good to men. In the garden flourish roses with  
дѣлаютъ добро люди. Въ (*пред.*) садъ цвѣтутъ роза съ (*пред.*)

thorns; for there is no rose without thorns. The children  
шипъ; ибо нѣтъ (*ген.*) роза безъ (*instr.*) шипъ. Дѣтя

wash themselves with the water of the river. A glass of  
умываются вода рѣкѣ. Стаканъ съ (*instr.*)

water is on the table of the room. Tears of joy glisten  
водѣ стоитъ на (*пред.*) столъ комната. Слезѣ радость блестѣтъ

in the eyes of the mother. The glory of the wicked is  
въ (*пред.*) глазъ мать. Слава злодѣй (*естъ*)

without stability; but the names of the beneficent shine  
 непродолжительна; но имя благодѣтель сѣяютъ  
 in eternity. Happiness on earth consists in  
 въ (*prep.*) вѣчность. Счастье на (*prep.*) землѣ состоитъ въ (*prep.*)  
 tranquillity of mind and in purity of conscience. Young people  
 спокойствіе духъ и въ чистотѣ совѣсть. Юношѣ  
 love the song of the nightingale, on the bank of a river,  
 любятъ пѣніе соловей, на (*prep.*) берегу ручей,  
 by light of the moon. To tell the truth is the duty  
 при (*prep.*) свѣтъ луны. Говорить правда есть долгъ  
 of children. To love God with heart and soul. The ants and  
 дѣтя. Любить Богъ сердце и душа. Муравей и  
 the beavers may serve as a pattern to man. An excursion  
 бобръ могутъ служить (*instr.*) примѣръ человекъ. Поѣздка  
 to Moscow and to Kiew. The entrance of the room  
 въ (*acc.*) Москвѣ и въ Кіевѣ. Входъ въ (*acc.*) библіотека  
 of reading (reading-room). Give to the master the book  
 для (*gen.*) чтеніе. Подѣй учитель тетрадь  
 of verses on the occasion of the feast. One must rise  
 со (*instr.*) стихъ на (*acc.*) случай праздникъ. Надобно вставать  
 in the morning, work in the day, rest in the evening, and  
 (*instr.*) утро, работать день *т*, отдыхать вечеръ, и  
 sleep at night. The roar of canons and the sound of bells  
 спать ночь. Громъ пушка и звонъ колоколъ  
 announced to the citizens the arrival of the conqueror  
 возвестили гражданъ о (*prep.*) прибытіе побѣдитель  
 of the enemies of the country.  
 врагъ отечество.

## THE ADJECTIVE.

32. — The *adjectives* (прилагательныя имена) Division of the adjectives. in the Russian language are of three kinds: 1) The *qualifying* (качественныя) adjectives, as: чѣрный кафтанъ, a black coat; тихое дитя, a quiet child; весёлая жизнь, a joyous life. 2) The *possessive* (притяжательныя) adjectives, as: отцовъ сынъ, the father's son; лисья шкура, a fox skin; золотое кольцо, a gold ring; лѣтний садъ, the summer garden. 3) The *numeral* (числительныя) adjectives, as: два стола, two tables; второй мѣсяцъ, the second month.

To the adjectives belong also the *possessive*, *demonstrative*, *interrogative* and other pronouns, as also the *participles*, which are at times used as simple adjectives. The *Numeral* adjectives, which in Russian have their peculiar inflections, will be treated of in a separate article.

33. — The *qualifying* adjectives, or such as express the quality of an object, end in *ый* and *ій*, or, with the accent, in *ой* (neut. *ое* and *ее*, fem. *ая* and *яя*); e. g. добрый, good; лёгкій, light; синій, blue; сухой, dry; большій, great. Qualifying adjectives.

34. — The *possessive* adjectives, most of which are peculiar to the Russian language, are divided into *individual*, *common*, *material* and *circumstantial*. Possessive adjectives.

1. The *individual* or *special* (личныя, частныя), possessive adjectives, which mark the relation of an object to an individual, or in other words to an animate or personified being, end in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ* and *ынъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), or in *ъ* (neut. *е*, fem. *я*), and are formed from the names of the objects in question by changing *ъ* and *о* into *овъ*

(or into *евъ* after the lingual or a hissing consonant; *й* and *в* into *евъ*; *а*, *я* and *ь* into *инъ*, and *ца* into *ынъ*, remembering however that in this formation the adjective follows the genitive inflection of the substantive; e. g. *сыновъ*, *the son's*; *Марковъ*, *Mark's*; *Львовъ*, *Leon's*; *Христовъ*, *Christ's*; *стражевъ*, *the guardian's*; *отцевъ*, *the father's*; *Андреевъ*, *Andrew's*; *царевъ*, *the king's*; *Никитинъ*, *Nicetas's*; *дядинъ*, *the uncle's*; *свекровинъ*, *mother-in-law's*; *материнъ*, *the mother's*; *лѣвицынъ*, *the girl's* (from *сынъ*, *Марко*, *Левъ*, *gen.* *Лѣва*, *Христосъ*, *gen.* *Христѣ*, *стражѣ*, *отцѣ*, *gen.* *отца*, *Андрѣй*, *царь*, *Никита*, *дядя*, *свекровъ*, *мать*, *gen.* *матери*, *дѣвица*). The termination *ь* is only found in the adjective *Господень*, *the Lord's* (from *Господѣ*), and in some few others in the ecclesiastical Slavonian.

To the above rule the following are exceptions: *Яковлевъ*, *James's*; *братинъ*, *the brother's*; *мужинъ*, *the husband's*; and also *Божій*, *God's*, formed from *Яковъ*, *братъ*, *мужъ* and *Богъ*. — We have still to remark that it is from these individual possessive adjectives that the patronymics, of which we have already spoken (§ 21), are formed; e. g. *Ивановичъ* and *Ивановна*, *John's son and daughter*; *Павловичъ* and *Павловна*, *Paul's son and daughter*; *Яковлевичъ* and *Яковлевна*, *James's son and daughter*; *Никитичъ* and *Никитична*, *Nicetas's son and daughter*.

2. The *common* or *generic* (общія, родовыя) possessive adjectives, which mark the relation of an object to all the individuals of the same species, have one principal termination, viz. *ій*, *овій* or *евій* (neut. *ое*, fem. *оя*), and some particular terminations; these are: *скій*, *ный*, *иный*, *овый*, *ній* (neut. *ое* and *ее*, fem. *ая* and *яя*), and are formed from the names of animate, inanimate and abstract objects: e. g. *рыбій*, *of a fish*; *медвѣжій*, *of a bear*; *птичій*, *of*

*a bird*; клопо́вий, *of a bug*; конё́вий, *of a horse*; ското́кий, *of cattle*; гуси́ный, *of a goose*; домо́вий, *domestic*; парово́й, *of steam*; рѣ́чной, *fluvial*; ду́шевный, *of the soul*; жи́зненный, *vital*; сыно́вний, *filial* (from рыба, медве́дь, пти́ца, клопъ, конь, скотъ, гусь, домъ, паръ, рѣка, душа, жизнь, сынъ).

To the individual and common possessive adjectives belong also several Russian family names; e. g. Дми́триевъ, Пу́шкинъ, Завадо́вский, as also several names of towns and villages; e. g. Ка́шинъ, Боро́дино, Смоле́нскъ, &c.

3. The *material* (вещественный) possessive adjectives, which indicate the material of which a thing is made, are formed from the names of material objects by means of the terminations *ый, ный, яный* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), as: золо́то́й, *of gold*; желе́зный, *of iron*; сере́бряный, *of silver*; дере́вьянный, *of wood* (from золо́то, желе́зо, серебро, дерево).

4. The *circumstantial* (обстоятельственный) possessive adjectives are formed from nouns and adverbs signifying *time* and *place*, by means of the terminations *ий* (neut. *ее*, fem. *ая*), and in the names of months, by the termination *скій* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*); as: лѣ́тний, *of summer*; ны́нѣшній, *actual*; та́мошний, *of this place*; ма́ртовскій, *of March*; ию́льскій, *of July* (from лѣто, нынѣ, тамъ, мартъ, июль).

35. — The properties of the adjectives in Russian are: the *gender* (родъ), the *number* (число), the *case* (паде́жъ), the *apocope of the termination* (у́сѣчѣніе оконча́нія), and the *degrees of signification* or *degrees of the qualities* (сте́пени ка́чества), and

Properties of  
adjectives.

these properties are all marked by particular inflections.

Gender, number, case. 36. — As the adjective must agree in gender, number and case with the substantive which it qualifies, it has three terminations to indicate the difference of *gender*, two for the different *numbers* and seven for the *cases*.

Apocope of the termination. 37. — As the adjectives are used for two different purposes, firstly simply to qualify the noun to which they belong, as: *добрый человекъ*, a good man; *новая шляпа*, a new hat; and secondly to form the attribute of the proposition, as: *человекъ (есть) добръ*, the man is good; *шляпа была нова*, the hat was new; they have in Russian two different terminations, the one full (полное), the other apocopated (усъщенное). These two terminations are as follows:

SINGULAR.			
	Masculine.	Neuter.	Feminine.
Full term:	ый (ой), ий;	ое, ее;	ая, яя;
Apoc. term:	ъ, ъ;	о, е;	а, я;
Examples:	{ новый, синий; новое, синее; новая, синяя; новъ, синь; ново, синѣ; новá, синjá;		

PLURAL.			
	Masculine.	Neut. and Fem.	
Full term:	ые, ie;	ья, ia.	
Apoc. term:	ы, и;	ы, и.	
Examples:	{ новые, синие; новыя, синія. новы, сини; новы, сини.		

These two examples *новый*, new, and *синий*, blue, show that the apocopated is formed from the full termination, by changing *ый* and *ий*, (or *ой* with the accent) into *ъ* and *ь*, according to



the nature of the preceding consonant, for the masculine, and by cutting of the final vowel in the other inflections. In this formation, the vowel *e* or *o* is inserted between two consonants in the masculine, in order to facilitate the pronunciation, and the semi-vowels *o* and *й* are changed into *e*, observing that the tonic accent, which remains on the same syllable in the inflections of the full termination, is often transposed in the apocopated termination, sometimes to the inserted vowel of the masculine, sometimes to the first syllable, at other times to the inflection of the feminine, and occasionally to that of the neuter and the plural; e. g.

бѣлый, white, <i>apoc. term.</i> бѣлѣ, лѣ, лѣ.	вѣрный, true, <i>apoc.</i> вѣренѣ, рно, рна.
здоровый, wholesome, здоровѣ, ово, ова.	тяжкій, heavy, тяжкѣ, жко, жкѣ.
дорогой, dear, дорогѣ, ого, огѣ.	истинный, veritable. истиненѣ, инно, инна.
великій, great, великѣ, йко, йкѣ.	древній, ancient, древенѣ, вне, вня.
дѣжій, stout, дѣжѣ, жѣ, жѣ.	пѣлый, full, пѣлонѣ, лно, лнѣ.
хорошій, good, хорошиѣ, ошѣ, ошѣ.	злой, evil, золѣ, зло, зла.
живой, live, живѣ, йво, йвѣ.	крѣпкій, strong, крѣпокѣ, йко, йкѣ.
сухой, dry, сухѣ, сѣхо, сѣхѣ.	лёгкій, light, легокѣ, ткѣ, ткѣ.
высокій, high, высокѣ, окѣ, окѣ.	горькій, bitter, горекѣ, рько, рькѣ.
быстрый, rapid, быстрѣ, тро, трѣ.	сильный, vigorous, силѣнѣ, льно, льнѣ.
твёрдый, firm, твёрдѣ, ёрдо, рдѣ.	спокойный, quiet, спокоенѣ, ѣпно, ѣйна.

The following are exceptions to this rule: *достойный*, *worthy*; *блаженный*, *happy*; *надменный*, *proud*, and *совершенный*, *perfect*, which form: *достѣнѣ, ѣнно, ѣйна*; *блаженѣ, надменѣ, совершенѣ, ённо, ённа*.

The qualifying adjectives have both terminations, except *радѣ*, *joyous*, and *горѣздѣ*, *except*, which have only the apocopated, while *большой*, *great*, and *меньшой*, *little*, have only the full termination. The individual possessive adjectives have only the apocopated termination, while the material and circumstantial possessive adjectives have only the full termination. The same is the case with several common possessive adjectives, with the exception of such as end in *йѣ*, which in the singular have the full, and in the plural the apocopated termination.

38. — The qualifying adjectives have five degrees <sup>Degrees of signification.</sup> of signification, viz. the *positive*, the *comparative*, the *superlative*, the *diminutive* and the *augmentative*.

1. The *positive* (положительная стéпень) is indicated by the ordinary terminations, full and apocopated; e. g. бѣлый and бѣль, *white*; сухой and сухъ, *dry*; синій and синь, *blue*.

2. The *comparative* (сравнительная стéпень) is marked in the full termination by the inflections нѣйшій, айшій, шій (neut. *ее*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated termination by the invariable inflections *нѣ* and *е*, and is formed in three different ways:

1) By changing the termination of the positive, preceded by any consonant except a guttural, into нѣйшій for the full, and into *нѣ* for the apocopated termination; e. g.

бѣлый, white, *comp.* бѣлѣйшій and бѣлѣ, whiter.  
 слабый, weak, . . . слабѣйшій and слабѣ, weaker.  
 живой, live, . . . живѣйшій and живѣ, more live.  
 полный, full, . . . полнѣйшій and полнѣ, more full.

From this rule are excepted the following adjectives, which though they have the full termination нѣйшій, have the apocopated in *е*, changing at the same time the mutable consonant.

богатый, rich, *comp. full term.* богатѣйшій, *apoc. term.* богаче.  
 дешёвый, cheap, . . . дешёвѣйшій, . . . дешёвѣ.  
 густой, thick, . . . густѣйшій, . . . гуще.  
 красивый, handsome, . . . краснѣйшій, . . . краше.  
 (No красивый, *red*, forms regularly: краснѣ.)  
 крутой, steep, . . . крутѣйшій, . . . круче.  
 поздний, tardy, . . . позднѣйшій, . . . позже.  
 простой, simple, . . . простѣйшій, . . . проще (and простѣ.)  
 твёрдый, firm, . . . твердѣйшій, . . . твёрже.  
 толстый, thick, . . . толстѣйшій, . . . толще.  
 частый, frequent, . . . частѣйшій, . . . чаще.  
 чистый, pure, . . . чистѣйшій, . . . чище.

The adjectives горячій, *burning*; лысый, *bald*; сізый, *dove-coloured*; свѣжій, *fresh*; and others in зый, сый, жій, чій, щій, have only the apocopated termination *нѣ*: горячѣ, лысѣ, сізѣ, свѣжѣ.

2) By changing the termination of the positive, preceded by one of the gutturals (г, к, х), into *aiiuii* for the full, and into *e* for the apocopated termination, permuting the consonant at the same time; e. g.

стрóгий, strict, *compar.* стрóжайшій and стрóже, stricter.  
 крѣпкiй, strong, . . . крѣпчѣйшій and крѣпче, stronger.  
 вѣтхiй, old, . . . вѣтшѣйшій and вѣтше, older.

Exceptions. — Most of the adjectives in *zii*, *kiü*, *xiiü*, have not the full termination of the comparative; and also the following adjectives form their comparatives in different ways:

долгiй, long, *comp. full term.* должайшій, *apoc. term.* долѣше.  
 дорогóй, dear, . . . . . дражайшій, . . . . . дороже.  
 далѣкiй and дальнiй, far, . . . дальнѣйшій, . . . . . далѣше.  
 близкiй, near, . . . . . ближайшій, . . . . . ближе.  
 глубокiй, deep, . . . . . глубочайшій, . . . . . глубже.  
 горькiй, bitter, . . . . . горчѣйшій, . . . . . горче.  
 (No горькiй, *bad*, takes the Slav. inflection горшій and горше.)  
 короткiй and краткiй, short, . . . кратчайшій, . . . . . короче.  
 рѣдкiй, rare, . . . . . рѣдчайшій, . . . . . рѣже.  
 сладкiй, sweet, . . . . . сладчайшій, . . . . . слаще.  
 тонкiй, thin, . . . . . тончайшій, . . . . . тоньше.  
 тяжкiй, heavy, . . . . . тяжчайшій, . . . . . тяжче.  
 широкiй, broad, . . . . . широчайшій, . . . . . шире.  
 гадкiй, dirty, . . . . . } These five { . . . . . гадже.  
 гладкiй, smooth, . . . . . } have not the { . . . . . гладже.  
 жидкiй, liquid, . . . . . } full term. { . . . . . жидже.  
 узкiй, narrow, . . . . . } of the com- { . . . . . уже.  
 слабкiй, slack, . . . . . } parative. { . . . . . слабже.

3) The inflection *uiiü* for the comparative is only found in the following adjectives, three of which take their comparative from another root:

высокiй, high; *comp. full term.* высшій, *apoc. term.* выше.  
 молодóй, young; . . . . . младшій, . . . . . моложе.  
 низкiй, low; . . . . . низшій, . . . . . ниже.  
 старýй, old; . . . . . старшій and старѣйшій, старше and старѣе.  
 худóй, bad; . . . . . худшій, . . . . . хуже.  
 великiй (and большóй), great; большiй, . . . . . больше.  
 малýй (and меньшóй), little; меньшiй, . . . . . меньше.  
 хорóшiй, good; . . . . . лучшiй, . . . . . лучше.

1. Care must be taken not to confound the comparative of the adjectives *дольше*, *longer*; *тоньше*, *finer*; *дальше*, *more distant*; *больше*, *greater*, *меньше*, *less*, with that of the adverbs *дольше*, *longer*; *тоньше*, *finer*; *дальше*, *further*; *больше*, *more*; *меньше*, *less*. But this difference exists only in the above five words, the comparative of the adverbs being in every other instance similar to that of the adjectives in the apocopated termination.

2. The apocopated termination of the comparative sometimes takes the preposition *по*, which softens and diminishes the force; e. g. *побъльше*, *a little whiter*; *потоньше*, *a little finer*; *получше*, *a little better*.

3. Such adjectives as want one of the terminations of the comparative, supply its place with the adverb *болѣе* before the positive; e. g. *болѣе узкій*, *narrower*; *болѣе жидкій*, *more liquid*; *болѣе радъ*, *more joyous*; *болѣе гораздъ*, *more expert*.

3. The *superlative* (*превосходная стѣпень*) in Russian is not marked by any particular inflection, except in the four following adjectives:

*великій*, great; *compar.* *большій*; *superl.* *величайшій*, greatest.  
*высокій*, high; . . . . *высшій*; . . . *высочайшій*, highest.  
*малый*, little; . . . . *меньшій*; . . . *малѣйшій*, least.  
*низкій*, low; . . . . *нижшій*; . . . *нижайшій*, lowest.

In all the other adjectives, in the full termination, the superlative is expressed by that of the comparative, the words *изъ всѣхъ*, *of all*, being understood, or the particle *най* being placed before it, or also by that of the positive, placing before it the words *самый* (*n.* *самое*, *f.* *самая*), as: *легчайшій* (*изъ всѣхъ*), *наилегчайшій* or *самый лёгкій*, *the lightest*; *лучшій* (*изъ всѣхъ*), *наилучшій*, or *самый лучший* (*improperly*, for *самый хорошій*), *the best*. In the apocopated termination the superlative is the same as the comparative, adding the word *всѣхъ* or *всего*, e. g. *всѣхъ легче*, *the lightest*; *всѣхъ лучше*, *the best*; *всего важнѣе*, *the most important*; *всего труднѣе*, *the most difficult*.

4. The *diminutive* degree (уменьшительная степень) is used to mark the diminution of quality, indicating either a want or smallness of any quality in an object, or a softening of the force of the quality, and also for the agreement of the adjective with the diminutive noun; e. g. *бѣловѣтная* чернила, *whitish ink*; *рыженькая* лошадка, *a little bay horse*; *маленькая* дѣвочка, *a little young girl*. The diminutive adjective in the former case ends, in the full termination, in *овѣтный* or *евѣтный* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated in *овѣтѣ* or *евѣтѣ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), and in the latter case, in the full termination, it ends in *онькій* and *енькій* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated, in *онекѣ* and *енекѣ* (neut. *нѣко*, fem. *нѣка*); e. g.

*бѣлый*, white; *dim.* *бѣловѣтный* or *бѣловѣтъ*, and *бѣленькій* or *бѣленекъ*.  
*тѣплый*, hot; . . . *тѣловѣтный* or *тѣловѣтъ*, and *тѣленькій* or *тѣленекъ*.  
*сухой*, dry; . . . *суховѣтный* or *суховѣтъ*, and *сухонькій* or *сухонекъ*.  
*красный*, red; . . . *красновѣтный* or *-новѣтъ*, and *красненькій* or *-ленекъ*.  
*синій*, blue; . . . *спивѣтный* or *спивѣтъ*, and *синенькій* or *синенекъ*.  
*рыжий*, bay; . . . *рыжевѣтный* or *рыжевѣтъ*, and *рыженькій* or *рыженекъ*.

The diminutive ending *овѣтый*, *евѣтый*, must not be confounded with the similar ending of the positive, which belongs to the qualifying adjectives; e. g. *виновѣтый*, *culpable*; *угловѣтый*, *angular*; *поздравѣтый*, *porous*; *угревѣтый*, *scaly*.

5. The *augmentative* degree (увеличительная степень) is used in the qualifying adjectives to express the abundance or excess of quality, and is formed in the full termination by the prepositive particle *пре*, and in the apocopated by the endings *ѣхонекѣ* and *ѣшенекѣ*, or *ѣхонекѣ* and *ѣшенекѣ* (neut. *нѣко*, fem. *нѣка*); e. g.

*бѣлый*, white; *augm.* *пребѣлый*, or *бѣлѣхонекъ* and *бѣлѣшенекъ*, quite white.  
*сухой*, dry; . . . *пресухой*, or *сухѣхонекъ* and *сухѣшенекъ*, very dry.  
*лѣгкій*, light; . . . *прелѣгкій*, or *лѣгѣхонекъ* and *лѣгѣшенекъ*, very light.  
*малый*, little; . . . *премалый*, or *малѣхонекъ* and *малѣшенекъ*, very little.

## DECLENSIONS OF ADJECTIVES.

DECLENSIONS OF ADJECTIVES.														
FIRST.					SECOND.					THIRD.				
FULL TERMINATION.					APOCOPATED TERMINATION.					MIXED TERMINATION.				
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														
NUMBERS: . . . . .														
SINGULAR.														
PLURAL.														
CASSES: . . . . .														

The adjective прекрасный, *beautiful*, in which the particle *пре* has an augmentative meaning, is used as a simple adjective to be distinguished from красный, *red*; but it is not the same case with прелестный, *charming*, derived from прелесть, *charm*.

39. — The Russian adjectives have three *declensions*; the *first* for adjectives of the *full termination*, the *second* for those of the *apocopated*, and the *third* for those of the *mixed termination*, i. e. for such common possessive adjectives in *и* (neut. *о*, fem. *я*), as have some inflections of the full and others of the apocopated termination. Each of these declensions has three endings for three genders, masculine, feminine and neuter, corresponding to the three declensions of substantives, as is seen in the opposite table.

In declining adjectives according to this table, attention is required to the following observations:

1. The inflection *ой* of the *nominative* singular masculine, instead of *ый*, or of *и* preceded by a guttural or a hissing consonant, is only used when the accent is on the last syllable; e. g. слепой, *blind*; восковой, *of wax*; глухой, *deaf*; чужой, *foreign*; большой, *great* (instead of слепый, восковый, глухий, чужий, большой).

2. The inflection *ия* or *ія* of the *genitive* singular feminine is Slavonian, and is only used in poetry, or in religious prose; e. g. кротость святія жизни, *the sweetness of a holy life*; Соборъ Казанскія Божія Матери, *the Cathedral of Our-Lady of Casan*.

3. The inflection *ой*, *ей* or *ею* of the *instrumental* singular feminine is a contraction of *ою*, *ею* or *еюю* in use in familiar language.

4. The inflection *ю*, of the *prepositional* singular masculine and neuter of the II declension, is confined to the names of families and towns, and the inflection *омъ* to the individual possessive adjectives, and to the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination. (See Paradigms 9, 10, 11, 12, 13.)

## PARADIGMS OF THE THREE

DECLENSIONS:		SINGU					
		Masculine and neuter genders.					
		Nomin. and Vocative.	Genitive.	Dative.	Accus.	Instr.	Prep.
FIRST.	FULL.	1. { м. новѣй, new . . . . . н. новое . . . . . }	нов-аго . . . . .	ому . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		2. { м. мягкѣй, tender . . . . . н. мягкое . . . . . }	мягк-аго . . . . .	ому . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		3. { м. синѣй, blue . . . . . н. синее . . . . . }	син-аго . . . . .	ему . . . . .	{ the Nominative, with the names of inanimate beings. the Genitive, with the names of animate beings.	ымъ . . . . .	емъ . . . . .
		4. { м. свѣжѣй, fresh . . . . . н. свѣжее . . . . . }	свѣж-аго . . . . .	ему . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	емъ . . . . .
		5. { Графа Толстой, . . . . . }	Толст-аго . . . . .	ому . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		6. м. портной, a tailor . . . . .	портн-аго . . . . .	ому . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		7. н. жаркое, a roast . . . . .	жарк-аго . . . . .	ому . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		8. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .		. . . . .	. . . . .
SECOND.	APOCOPATED.	9. { м. царевъ, the king's . . . . . н. царева . . . . . }	царев-а . . . . .	у . . . . .	{ the Nominative, with the names of inanimate beings. the Genitive, with the names of animate beings. like	ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		10. { м. бѣлѣ, white . . . . . н. бѣлая . . . . . }	бѣл-а . . . . .	ѣ . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		11. { Князь Решинъ . . . . . }	Решин-а . . . . .	ѣ . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	ѣ . . . . .
		12. { города Каминъ . . . . . }	Камин-а . . . . .	ѣ . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	ѣ . . . . .
		13. { село Бородино . . . . . }	Бородин-а . . . . .	ѣ . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	ѣ . . . . .
		14. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .		. . . . .	. . . . .
		15. { м. Господень, the Lord's . . . . . н. Господне . . . . . }	Господн-а . . . . .	ю . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	емъ . . . . .
		16. { м. синѣ, blue . . . . . н. синѣе . . . . . }	син-а . . . . .	ю . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	емъ . . . . .
THIRD.	MIXED.	17. { м. рыбѣй, of fish . . . . . н. рыбье . . . . . }	рыб-аго . . . . .	ьему . . . . .		ьымъ . . . . .	ьемъ . . . . .

The following observations, relative to the *tonic accent* in the declension of the adjectives, are important:

1. All the inflections of the full and of the mixed termination, i. e. in the 1st and 3rd declension, retain the accentuation of the nominative singular masculine.

2. In the apocopated termination, i. e. in the 2nd declension, the accent is often transferred to the last syllable, sometimes only in the nominative feminine, and at other times in the neuter and in the plural. The oblique cases of the apocopated termination either retain the accentuation of the nominative, or transfer the accent to the last syllable.



## DECLENSIONS OF ADJECTIVES.

L A R. <i>Feminine gender.</i>	P L U R A L. <i>For the three genders.</i>
<i>N. and V. G. D. and P. Acc. Instr.</i>	<i>Nom. and Voc. Gen. and Pr. Dat. Accus. Instr.</i>
нов-ая . . . ой . . . ую . . . ою .	м. нов-ые . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими н. ф. нов-ья . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими
мѣтк-ая . . . ой . . . ую . . . ою .	м. мѣтк-е . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими н. ф. мѣтк-я . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими
сѣн-я . . . ей . . . юю . . . ею .	м. сѣн-е . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими н. ф. сѣн-я . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими
свѣж-ая . . . ей . . . ую . . . ею .	м. свѣж-е . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими н. ф. свѣж-я . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими
Толст-ѣя . . . ой . . . ую . . . ою .	(Графы) Толст-ѣе . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими
. . . . .	портн-ѣе . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими
кладов-ѣя . . . ой . . . ую . . . ою .	. . . жарк-ѣя . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими
a storehouse.	. . . кладов-ѣя . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими
царѣв-а . . . ой . . . у . . . ою .	. . . царѣв-ы . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими
бѣл-ѣ . . . ой . . . у . . . ою .	. . . бѣл-ѣ . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими
(Князья) Репнин-ѣ . . . ой . . . у . . . ою .	(Князья) Репнин-ѣ . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими
. . . . .	. . . . .
(деревя) . . . . .	. . . . .
Мурин-а . . . ой . . . у . . . ою .	. . . . .
Господн-я . . . ей . . . ю . . . ою .	. . . Господн-и . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими
снѣ-ѣ . . . ей . . . ю . . . ею .	. . . снѣ-ѣ . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими
рыб-ѣя . . . ей . . . ю . . . ею .	. . . рыб-ѣя . . . ихъ . . . имъ . . . ими

The *accusative masculine*, singular and plural, of the adjectives is like the *nominative*, when the noun, which they qualify, designates an inanimate or abstract object, as is also the case with the substantives; and it is like the *genitive*, when the noun designates an animate being, even when the accusative of the noun in question may not happen to be the same as the genitive, as is the case with the masculine substantives of the 3rd declension; ex. мы любимъ вѣрнаго слугу; we love the faithful servant; мы любимъ вѣрныхъ слугъ; we love the faithful servants.

5. The apocopated termination of the adjectives is often used instead of the full in poetry, for the sake of the rhythm; e. g. *пушисты* имен (instead of *пушистые*), *thick hoarfrost*; *быстры* воды (instead of *быстрыя*), *rapid waters*; *добр*у молодцу (instead of *доброму*), *to the good young man*; *сыр* землю (instead of *сырую*), *the moist earth*.

6. The inflection *и*, *иа*, *иаго*, &c. of the common possessive adjectives is used in an elevated style, and *е*, *еа*, *еаго*, &c. in familiar language.

7. As the *vocative* of the adjectives is always the same as the nominative, it has been omitted in the table of the declensions.

Paradigms  
of the de-  
clensions of  
adjectives.

40. — With due attention to the above remarks all the adjectives of the Russian language can be declined according to the 17 paradigms. (See p. 76 sq.)

First  
declension.

According to the 1st paradigm (по́выйи) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *ый*; 2) the common possessive adjectives in *овый*, *есый*, *ный*, *иный*; 3) all the material possessive adjectives; 4) the diminutive adjectives in *оватый* and *еватый*; remarking that the termination *ый* when accented is changed into *ой*. Such are:

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1) <i>Добрый</i> , good, <i>н. доброе, ф. добрая</i> .         | <i>Дорожный</i> , of road, <i>дорожное, дорожная</i> .   |
| <i>Сильный</i> , vigorous, <i>сильное, сильная</i> .           | <i>Носовой</i> , of the nose, <i>носовое, носовая</i> .  |
| <i>Старый</i> , old, <i>старое, старая</i> .                   | 3) <i>Золотой</i> , of gold, <i>золотое, золотая</i> .   |
| <i>Чёрный</i> , black, <i>чёрное, чёрная</i> .                 | <i>Железный</i> , of iron, <i>железное, железная</i> .   |
| <i>Красный</i> , red, <i>красное, красная</i> .                | <i>Масляной</i> , of oil, <i>масляное, масляная</i> .    |
| <i>Белый</i> , white, <i>белое, белая</i> .                    | <i>Кожаный</i> , of leather, <i>кожаное, кожаная</i> .   |
| <i>Умный</i> , wise, <i>умное, умная</i> .                     | <i>Деревянный</i> , of wood, <i>деревянное, -ая</i> .    |
| <i>Грубый</i> , coarse, <i>грубое, грубая</i> .                | 4) <i>Беловатый</i> , whitish, <i>беловатое, -ая</i> .   |
| <i>Полный</i> , full, <i>полное, полная</i> .                  | <i>Красноватый</i> , reddish, <i>красноватое, -ая</i> .  |
| <i>Нежный</i> , tender, <i>нежное, нежная</i> .                | <i>Синеватый</i> , bluish, <i>синеватое, синеватая</i> . |
| <i>Слепой</i> , blind, <i>слепое, слепая</i> .                 | <i>Рыжеватый</i> , ruddy, <i>рыжеватое, -ая</i> .        |
| <i>Простой</i> , simple, <i>простое, простая</i> .             |  |
| <i>Худой</i> , bad, <i>худое, худая</i> .                      |  |
| <i>Нямой</i> , dumb, <i>нямое, нямая</i> .                     |  |
| 2) <i>Бобровый</i> , of beaver, <i>н. бобровое, ф. -овая</i> . |  |
| <i>Ежовый</i> , of hedgehog, <i>ежовое, ежовая</i> .           |  |
| <i>Пчелиный</i> , of bee, <i>пчелиное, пчелиная</i> .          |  |

According to the 2nd paradigm (мягкѣй) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *ѣй*, *кѣй*, *хѣй*; 2) the common possessive adjectives in *скѣй* and *цкѣй*; 3) the diminutive adjectives in *енкѣй* and *онкѣй*; the termination *ѣй* when accented being also changed into *ѣѣ*. Such are:

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1) Лѣгкѣй, light, л. лёгкое, ф. лёгкая. | Господскѣй, seigneurial, л. господское, ф. господская. |
| Строгѣй, strict, строгое, строгая.      | Русскѣй, Russian, русское, русская.                    |
| Кротѣй, kind, кроткое, кроткая.         | Нѣмецкѣй, German, нѣмецкое, нѣмецкая.                  |
| Великѣй, great, великое, великая.       | Юдскѣй, men's, юдское, юдская.                         |
| Упрѣгѣй, elastic, упрѣгое, упрѣгая.     | Городскѣй, of a town, городское, городская.            |
| Горькѣй, bitter, горькое, горькая.      |  |
| Вѣтхѣй, old, вѣтхое, вѣтхая.            | 3) Маленькѣй, little, маленькое, -кая.                 |
| Дорогѣй, dear, дорогое, дорогая.        | Бѣленькѣй, whitish, бѣленькое, бѣленькая.              |
| Сухѣй, dry, сухое, сухая.               | Лѣгонькѣй, lightish, лѣгонькое, -кая.                  |
| Глухѣй, deaf, глухое, глухая.           |  |
| 2) Звѣрскѣй, bestial, звѣрское, -ская.  |  |
| Жѣнскѣй, feminine, женское, женская.    |  |

According to the 3rd paradigm (сѣнѣй) are declined the adjectives: 1) qualifying, 2) circumstantial possessive, and 3) some common possessive, in *нѣй* (neut. *ее*, fem. *яя*); such are:

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1) Древнѣй, ancient, л. древнее, ф. древняя. | Здѣшнѣй, of here, л. здѣшнее, ф. здѣшняя. |
| Ближнѣй, neighbour, ближнее, -няя.           | Нынѣшнѣй, actual, нынѣшнее, -няя.         |
| Дальнѣй, distant, дальнее, дальняя.          | Зимнѣй, hybernal, зимнее, зимняя.         |
| Искреннѣй, sincere, искреннее, искренняя.    | Весѣннѣй, vernal, весѣнное, -няя.         |
| Игрѣнѣй, light-sorrel, игрѣнее, игрѣняя.     | Лѣтнѣй, estival, лѣтнее, лѣтняя.          |
| Порѣжнѣй, empty, порѣжнее, порѣжная.         | Осеннѣй, autumnal, осеннее, осенняя.      |
| Позднѣй, tardy, позднее, поздняя.            | Прѣжнѣй, precedent, прѣжнее, -жая.        |
| Раннѣй, early, раннее, ранняя.               | Послѣднѣй, last, послѣднее, -няя.         |
| 2) Вчерашнѣй, yesterday's, вчерашнее, -шая.  | 3) Мужнѣй, marital, мужнее, мужняя.       |
| Вечернѣй, evening's, вечернее, вечерняя.     | Дружнѣй, friend's, дружнее, дружняя.      |
| Утреннѣй, morning's, утреннее, утренняя.     | Сынѣнѣй, filial, сынѣнее, сынѣнѣя.        |

According to the 4th paradigm (свѣжѣй) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *жѣй*, *чѣй*, *шѣй* and *щѣй* (neut. *ее*, fem. *яя*); 2) all the comparatives and superlatives in the full termination; observing that the ending *ѣѣ* when accented is changed into *ѣѣ*. Such are:

- |                                       |                                      |
|---------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| 1) Дюжій, robust, и. дюжее, ф. дюжая. | Чужой, foreign, и. чужбе, ф. чужая.  |
| Горячий, hot, горячее, горячая.       | Общій, common, общее, общая.         |
| Кипячий, boiling, кипящее, -чая.      | Ничій, poor, нищее, ничая.           |
| Хороший, good, хорошее, хорошая.      | 2) Большой, greater, большее, больш- |
| Большой, great, больше, большаа.      | шая.                                 |
| Похожий, resembling, похожее, -жая.   | Лучший, better, лучшее, лучшая.      |
| Пригожий, pretty, пригожее, при-      | меньший, least, меньшее, меньшая.    |
| гожая.                                | Нижний, more tender, -йшее, -шая.    |

According to the 5th paradigm (Толстой) are declined family names in *ой* and *ий*, or in *ой* with the accent (fem. *ая*); the vowel *ы* being changed into *и* after a guttural. Such are:

- |                                     |                                    |
|-------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| Смирной, Smirnoi, ф. Смирная.       | Трубецкой, Trobetzkoï, ф. Трубец-  |
| Полевой, Polaivoi, Полевая.         | кая.                               |
| Нарезной, Naraiznoi, Нарезная.      | Заводовский, Zavodovski, Заводо-   |
| Браницкий, Branitzki, Браницкая.    | вская.                             |
| Бобринский, Bobrinski, Бобринская.  | Жуковский, Zhookovski, Жуковская.  |
| Долгорукий, Dolgorooki, Долгорукая. | Мещерский, Mestcherski, Мещерская. |

Such family names as are formed from the genitive, as: Мертваго, *Mertvaho*; Папенаго, *Parenaho*; Сухихъ, *Sookhikh*, Нагихъ, *Naghikh*, are indeclinable.

According to the 6th, 7th and 8th paradigm (портной, жаркое, кладовая) are declined some masculine neuter and feminine nouns, which are in fact only adjectives used as substantives, remembering to change *о* into *е* and *ы* into *и* after a guttural or a hissing consonant. Such are:

- |                         |                                  |
|-------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1) Выборный, a deputy.  | 2) Животное, an animal.          |
| Вестовой, a messenger.  | Мороженое, ice-creams.           |
| Кормчий, the pilot.     | Насекомое, an insect.            |
| Часовой, a sentry.      | 3) Вселенная, the universe.      |
| Мастеровой, an artisan. | Гостиная, a drawing-room.        |
| Подьячий, a clerk.      | Набережная, a quay.              |
| Прожой, a passenger.    | Чертежная, room for the drawers. |
| Певчий, a chanter.      | Передняя, an antechamber.        |

Second declension.

According to the 9th paradigm (царевъ) are declined the individual possessive adjectives in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ*, *ынъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*). Such are:

- |                                      |   |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| Сыновъ, son's, и. сыново, ф. сынова. | Христовъ, Christ's, и. Христово, ф. Христова. |
| Петровъ, Peter's, Петрово, Петрова.  |   |
| Отцовъ, father's, отцово, отцова.    | Материнъ, mother's, материно, -рина.          |
| Гербовъ, hero's, гербово, гербова.   | Дочеринъ, daughter's, дочерино, дочерина.     |
| Павловъ, Paul's, Павлово, Павлова.   |   |

Никѣтинъ. Nicetas's, *н.* Никѣтино, *ф.* Царѣцѣинъ, the queen's, *н.* царѣцѣино.  
 Никѣтина. *ф.* -цѣина. | -цѣана.  
 Ильинъ. Elias's, Ильино, Ильина. Дѣвѣдинъ, the girl's, дѣвѣцино.

The adjective Христовъ takes in the prepositional singular the inflection *ю* (instead of *омѣ*) in the phrase: по Рождествѣ Христовѣ (instead of Христовѣомѣ), after the Birth of Christ.

According to the 10th paradigm (бѣлъ) are declined the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination in *ъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), with the exception of those in *жѣ*, *чѣ*, *шѣ* and *щѣ*, which belong to the 16th paradigm, remembering to change *и* into *у* after the gutturals (*з*, *к*, *х*), and remarking that the tonic accent, which remains on the same syllable in all the inflections of the full termination, is often transferred, in the apocopated, to the last syllable, sometimes in the feminine only, and at other times also in the neuter and plural. Such are:

Радъ, joyous, <i>н.</i> радо, <i>ф.</i> рада; <i>рл.</i> радѣ.	Высокъ, high, <i>н.</i> высокѣ, <i>ф.</i> высока; <i>рл.</i> высокѣ.
Гораздъ, expert, -до, -да; горазды.	Сильнъ, vigorous, <i>сильно</i> , <i>сильна</i> ;
Новъ, new, ново, нова; новы.	<i>сильны</i> .
Слабъ, weak, слабо, слаба; слабы.	Умнъ, wise, умно, умна; умны.
Цѣлъ, entire, цѣло, цѣла; цѣлы.	Теплъ, hot, тепло, тепла; теплы.
Великъ, great, велико, велика; велики.	Легкъ, light, легко, легка; легки.
Сухъ, dry, сухо, суха; сухи.	Добръ, good, добро, добра; добры.
Крѣпокъ, strong, крѣпко, крѣпка; крѣпки.	Жѣлтъ, yellow, желто, желта; желты.
	Боленъ, sick, больно, больна; больны.

According to the 11th paradigm (Репинъ) are declined family names in *овѣ*, *евѣ*, *инѣ* and *ынѣ* (fem. *а*), which take in the prepositional singular masculine the inflexion *ю* (instead of *омѣ*). Such are:

Суворовъ, Suvorof, <i>ф.</i> Сувѣрова.	Дмитріевъ, Dmitrief, <i>ф.</i> Дмитріева.
Кутузовъ, Kutousof, Кутѣзова.	Гурьевъ, Goorief, Гурѣва.
Ломоносовъ, Lomonossof, Ломѣ-сова.	Васильевъ, Vassilief, Васильева.
Сторогановъ, Stroganof, Стрѣганова.	Державинъ, Derzhavin, Державина.
Крыловъ, Krylof, Крылова.	Карамзинъ, Karamzin, Карамзина.
Шинковъ, Shishkof, Шинкова.	Княжнинъ, Kniazhnin, Княжнина.
Херасковъ, Kheraskof, Хераскова.	Пушкинъ, Pooshkin, Пушкина.
Орловъ, Orlof, Орлова.	Потѣкинъ, Potomkin, Потѣкина.
	Голіцинъ, Golitzin, Голіцина.

Foreign family names, such as: Базедовъ, *Basedow*; Канкринъ, *Cancrin*, are declined like the substantives, and, having no feminine, are indeclinable when referring to females. The same

remark applies equally to Russian family names ending in *вичъ*; but sometimes in feminine they take the termination *вичева*; which then is declined as an adjective; e. g. у Графини Кѣн-*кричъ*, at the Countess *Cancrin*; у Госпожи Максимовичъ or Максимовичевой, at Madame *Maximovitch*.

According to the 12th, 13th and 14th paradigms (Кашинъ, Бородино, Мурина) are declined such names of towns, boroughs and villages, as end in the masculine in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ*, *ынъ*; in the neuter in *ово*, *ево*, *ино*, *ыно*, and in the feminine in *ова*, *ева*, *ина*, *ына*, which take also in the *prepositional* singular masculine and neuter the inflection *ѣ* (instead of *омъ*). Such are:

1) (городъ) Борисовъ, Borissow.	Царичино, Tzaritzino.
Могилѣвъ, Mohilef.	Остѣнкино, Ostankino.
Алексинъ, Alexin.	3) (деревня) Парголова, Pargolova.
Козловъ, Kozlof.	Краскова, Kraskova.
2) (село) Тарутино, Tarootino.	Леташиѣва, Letachova.
Измайлово, Izmailovo.	Валутина, Valootina.

Exceptions to this rule are the names of the following towns: Кіевъ, *Kief*; Псковъ, *Pleskow*; Харьковъ, *Charkof*; Гдовъ, *Gdof*; Ростовъ, *Rostof*; Орловъ, *Orlof*; as also the names of foreign towns, e. g. Берлинъ, *Berlin*, which are declined like substantives, having in the *instrumental* singular the inflection *омъ* (and not *ымъ*). The same is the case with the names of towns in *скъ*, *цкъ* and *ь*; as: Смоленскъ, *Smolensk*; Полоцкъ, *Polotsk*; Ярославль, *Yaroslavl*, &c.

In such names of towns as are formed of *ноеъ* and *ьно*, as: Новгородъ, *Novgorod*; Белоозеро, *Bieloozero*, both the adjective and substantive are declined: *G.* Новгорода, Бѣлозера; *D.* Новугороду, Бѣлуозеру; *I.* Новымъ-городомъ, Бѣлымъ-озеромъ; *P.* о Новугородѣ, Бѣлуозерѣ (taking also the inflection *ѣ* instead of *омъ*).

According to the 15th paradigm (Господень) is declined the individual possessive adjective:

Божій, of God, *и.* Божіе, *f.* Божія; *pl.* Божіи, which must not be confounded with the common possessive adjective божескій, *divine, relating to the attributes of God*. The adjective Божій takes also the inflections of mixed termination, as in Божье дерево, *southern wood* (a plant); Божья коровка, *cochineal, the lady-bird*; *G.* Божьяго дерева, Божьей коровки, *D.* Божьему дереву, &c.

According to the 16th paradigm (сннъ) are declined the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination ending in *o* or *ъ* (neut. *e*, fem. *я*), and also those in *жъ*, *чь*, *шъ*, *щъ* (neut. *e*, fem. *я*), remembering to change *я* into *a* and *ю* into *y* after the hissings (ж, ч, ш, щ). Such are:

Дрэвѣнь, ancient, <i>н.</i> дрэвѣ, <i>ф.</i> дрэвня.	Свѣжъ, fresh, <i>н.</i> свѣжѣ, <i>ф.</i> свѣжя.
Искренѣнь, sincere, искренне, -ення.	Рыжъ, caroty, рыже, рыжя.
Порѣженъ, empty, порѣжие, порѣжня.	Горячъ, burning, горячо, горяча.
Дюжь, robust, дюже, дюжя.	Хорошъ, good, хорошо, хороша.
Похѣжь, semblable, похѣже, похѣжа.	Тошъ, fasting, тоще, тоща.

According to the 17th paradigm (рыбій) are declined the common possessive adjectives in *ій*, *овій*, *евій* (neut. *о*, fem. *я*), which are formed from the specific names of animals; e. g. Third declension.

Оленій, of deer, <i>н.</i> оленѣ, <i>ф.</i> оленя.	Птвичій, of bird, <i>н.</i> птвичѣ, <i>ф.</i> птвичя.
Соболій, of sable, соболѣ, соболыя.	Птучій, of cock, птучѣ, птучья.
Козій, of goat, козѣ, козья.	Верблюжій, of camel, верблюже, -жя.
Коровій, of cow, коровѣ, коровья.	Лебѣжій, of swan, лебѣже, лебѣжя.
Овечій, of sheep, овечѣ, овечья.	Волчій, of ox, волчѣ, волчья.
Медвѣжій, of bear, медвѣже, медвѣжя.	Коневій, of horse, коневѣ, коневья.
Бараній, of ram, баранѣ, баранья.	Мышій, of mu, мышѣ, мышья.
Говяжій, of ox, говяжѣ, говяжя.	Телячій, of calf, телѣчѣ, телѣчья.
Слоновій, of elephant, слоновѣ, -вья.	Клоповій, of bug, клоповѣ, клоповья.
Сомовій, of silurus, сомовѣ, сомовья.	Волчій, of wolf, волчѣ, волчья.
Лисій, of fox, лисѣ, лисья.	Человѣчій, of man, человѣчѣ, -чья.

The possessive adjective *человѣчій* is used when applied to man as an animal, and the adjective *человѣчскій* (*н.* о, *ф.* я) to man as an intelligent being.

### EXERCISES ON THE ADJECTIVES.

It is necessary to observe preliminarily that according to the rules of construction in the Russian language the adjective is usually placed before the substantive, when it does not form the attribute of the proposition; and that the verb *to be* is commonly understood in the present.

An empty pocket; the pocket is empty. A strong castle; Apocope of the  
 Пустой карманъ; (есть) . Крѣпкій замокъ; termination.

the castle is strong. A faithful servant; the servant has been  
 Вѣрный слуга; былъ

faithful. The soft wax; the wax is soft. A quiet sleep; the  
Мягкій воскъ; Спокойный сонъ;

sleep is quiet. A worthy son; the son is worthy. A true  
Достойный сынъ; Истинный

friend; the friend is true. Perfect repose; the repose  
другъ; Совершенный покой;

will be perfect. A transparent glass; the glass is transparent.  
будеть Прозрачный стекло;

An ancient tradition; the tradition was ancient. A hot summer;  
Древний преданіе; было Тёплый лѣто;

the summer will be hot. A blunt pen; the pen is blunt.  
будеть Тупой перо;

An old hut; the hut is old. A blue paper; the paper is  
Вѣтхій хижина; Синій бумага;

blue. New houses; the houses are new. Rich families;  
Новый домъ; (суть) Богатый семьѣ;

the families were rich. Red ensigns; the ensigns will be red.  
были Красный знамя; будутъ

Degrees of White paper; whiter paper; the whitest paper. The Neva  
signification. Бѣлый бумага; Невá

is rapid, and the Volga is more rapid. The milk is  
(есть) быстрый, а Волга Молоко

liquid, and the water is more liquid. A deep brook; a deeper  
жидкій, а вода Глубокій ручей;

river. The houses are high, and the towers are higher.  
рѣка. Домъ (суть) высокій, а башня

Good tea; better tea; the best tea. The dogs are little;  
Хорошій чай; Собака малый;

the cats are less; but the mice are the least. The father is  
кошка; но мышъ Отець

young; the mother is younger; but the sister is the youngest.  
молодой; мать; но сестра



The hay is dear, and the straw is dearer. Milk is sweet;  
Сѣно дорогѣе, а солома . Молоко сладкій;

sugar is sweeter; but honey is the sweetest of all.  
сахаръ ; но мѣдъ .

Some whitish paper; some reddish ink; some blackish  
Бѣлый бумага; бѣлый чернила *pl*; чѣрный  
water; the colour is bluish. A little red cow; a little pony;  
водѣ; краска (*есно*) синій. Бѣлый коровка; малый лошадка;  
a little piebald horse; a poor little girl; the grey-headed  
пегій лошадка; бѣдный дѣвочка; старичёкъ

man is very old; the little old woman is very good. Very white  
(*есно*) старій; старушка добрый. Бѣлый

paper; the paper is very white; very dry wood; the wood  
бумага; ; сухой дровѣ *pl*;

is very dry.

The master of the large gardens, and the mistress of the new Declension of the full termination.  
Хозяинъ обширный садъ, и хозяйка новыи

house. A glass of good water and of red wine; whole  
домъ. Стаканъ хорошій водѣ и красныи вино; цѣлыи  
pots of pork-fat and of fir-resin. Do good  
горшочёкъ свиной салу и еловый смола. Дѣлай (*acc.*) добро

to poor children and to infirm old men, and do not go  
бѣдный дитѣ и дряхлыи старикъ, и не ходи

into the fields of others. This is the house of the Prince  
по (*dat.*) полѣ чужой. Вотъ (*nom.*) домъ Князь

Dolgoruki, that is the palace of the Countess Tolstoi, and  
Долгорукій, вотъ дворець Графиня Толстой, а

there are the large gardens of the young Counts Zavadovski.  
вотъ обширный садъ молодой Графъ Завадовскій.

I have admired the agreeable song of the nightingale of last year.  
Я дивился (*dat.*) пріятный пѣніе соловей прошлогдній.

To cut a swan's quill with a blunt penknife. There are  
 Чинить (acc.) лебединый перо тупой ножикъ. Вотъ (nom.)  
 some goose quills, some red crayons, some thick blank books,  
 гусиный перо, красный карандашъ, толстый тетрадь;  
 some oak-rulers, and great mathematical compasses, and here  
 дубовый линейка, и большой циркуль *m*, а вотъ  
 are some woollen clothes, some silk stockings, some beaver hats,  
 суконный кафтанъ, шелковый чулокъ, пуховый шляпа,  
 fine linen, and still finer lace. Love good  
 тонкий поютно и тончайший кружево. Люби (acc.) непорочный  
 morals; read useful books; honour old people;  
 нравъ; читай (acc.) полезный книга; чтн (acc.) старый люди *pl*;  
 praise good actions; keep the honest and faithful  
 хвали (acc.) добрый дѣло; береги (acc.) честный и вѣрный  
 servant. Give the new book to the most attentive  
 слуга. Подари (acc.) новый книга (dat.) самый прилежный  
 scholar. You praise the weather of spring, the splendour  
 ученикъ. Ты хвалишь (acc.) погода весенний, ясность *f*  
 of the summer nights, the coolness of autumn, and the colds  
 лѣтний ночь *f*, прохлада осенний и холодъ  
 of winter. I esteem the celebrated men, and the illustrious  
 зимний. Я уважаю (acc.) славный мужъ и знаменитый  
 commanders of ancient times. The great military manoeuvres of  
 полководецъ древний время. Большой манѣвръ въ (prep.)  
 this year will take place at Kransnoe Selo, and on the  
 нынѣшній годъ будутъ въ (prep.) Красное Село и на (prep.)  
 mountain of Douderhof.  
 Горы Дудергофскій.

Declension  
 of the apo-  
 copated ter-  
 mination.

He has left the house of his father, and he does  
 Онъ выѣхалъ изъ (gen.) домъ отца, и дѣлаетъ (acc.)  
 good to the daughter of his sister. He has sold the property  
 добро (dat.) дочь *f* сестринъ. Онъ продалъ (acc.) имѣние

of his wife to the son of his brother. To visit the temples of  
жѣннинъ (*dat.*) сынъ братининъ. Посѣщать (*acc.*) храмъ

the Lord and the churches of God. To resign one's self to  
Господень и церковь Божіи. Повиноваться (*dat.*)

the will of the Lord, and to acknowledge the majesty of the  
воли Господень, и познавать (*acc.*) величество

name of God. The first Russian Grammar was written by  
имя Божіи. Первый Русскій Грамматика была написана (*instr.*)

the immortal Lomonossov, and the History of Russia by  
бессмертныи Ломоносовъ, и Исторія Россійскій (*instr.*)

Nicholas Mikhailovitch Karamzin. The battles against the  
Николай Михайлович Карамзинъ. Сраженіе съ (*instr.*)

French were fought near Borodino and Borissov.  
Французъ происходилъ подъ (*instr.*) Бородино и подъ Борисовъ.

I have lived at Novgorod and at Bieloozero. The villages  
Я жила въ (*prep.*) Новгородъ и въ Белоозеро. Деревня

of the Princess Saltykov are situated near the town of Kashin.

Княгиня Салтыковъ лежатъ подъ (*instr.*) городъ Кашинъ.

There is a cloak of fox-skin, a sable-cap, a bird-nest, Declension  
Вотъ (*nom.*) шуба лисій, соболій шапка, птичій гнѣздо, of the mixed  
termination

some hare-skins, and some elephant's teeth. A pood of deer-  
заячій мехъ и слоновій зубъ. Пудъ оленинъ

flesh, a yard of ox-skin, and a pound of calf's brains. Do  
мясо, аршинъ воловій кожа, и фунтъ телячій мозгъ. Не

not go on the track of a wolf, and do not enter into the den  
ходи по (*dat.*) слѣдъ волчій, и не входи въ (*acc.*) берлогу

of the bear. A dissertation on the man's eye, and on the  
медвѣжій. Разсужденіе о (*prep.*) человѣчій глазъ, и о

fish-head. He deals in isinglass, in ox-fat,  
рыбій голова. Онъ торгуетъ (*instr.*) рыбій клей, бычачій сало,

in goats' skins, and in cocks' combs.

козій шкура, и петушій гребень *т.*

Declension  
of various  
adjectives.

The braggart is like the jay, adorned with  
Хвастунъ (*есць*) похожій на (*acc.*) соя, украшенный (*instr.*)

peacocks' feathers. The brother of the neighbour has arrived from  
павинній перо. Братъ сосѣдовъ приѣхалъ изъ (*gen.*)

a distant town, and the sister from a more distant village.  
дальній городъ, а сестра изъ дальній деревня.

John's coat is small, but that of Peter is still  
Ивановъ платье (*есць*) ўзкій, но (*платье*) Петровъ (*есць*) ещё

smaller. The good little old woman lives in a damp  
ўзкій. Добрый старушка живётъ въ (*prep.*) сырѣй

house, situated near the village Tzaritzino. I have bought a  
домъ, лежачій подъ (*instr.*) село Царіцыно. Я купилъ (*acc.*)

cloak of bear-skin with a collar of beaver-skin and a  
шуба медвѣжій съ (*instr.*) воротникъ бобрѣвый, и

cap of beaver-skin with a silk-ribbon. There is a handsome  
шапка бобрѣвый съ шёлковый лѣнта. Вотъ (*nom.*) прекрасный

book with a rich binding of morocco. Where shall we  
книга въ (*prep.*) богаты переплётъ сафьянный. Гдѣ мы

find an instance of purer self-denial, of more exalted  
найдемъ примѣръ чистый самоотверженіе, высѣій

love for the native land?

любовь ꙗкъ (*dat.*) отечество?

#### THE NUMERALS.

Division of  
numerals.

41. — The *numerals* (числительныя имена) are of two kinds: 1) the *cardinal* numerals (количественныя), which express the number; and 2) the *ordinal* numerals (порядочныя), which indicate order or rank, and are formed (with exception of *первый*) from the cardinals, as is seen below.

## CARDINAL NUMERALS.

## ORDINAL NUMERALS.

1. одинъ, <i>н. одно, ф. одна (sl. еди́нъ, ѱно, ѱна)</i> . . . . .	первый, <i>н. первое, ф. первая, first.</i>
2. два, <i>ф. двѣ</i> . . . . .	второй, <i>ое, ая, second.</i>
3. три . . . . .	третій, <i>тѣе, тѣя, third.</i>
4. четыре . . . . .	четвертый, <i>ое, ая, fourth.</i>
5. пять . . . . .	пятый, <i>ое, ая, fifth.</i>
6. шесть . . . . .	шестой, <i>ое, ая, sixth.</i>
7. семь ( <i>sl. седьмъ</i> ) . . . . .	седьмой, <i>ое, ая, seventh.</i>
8. восемь ( <i>sl. осьмъ</i> ) . . . . .	осьмой, <i>ое, ая, eighth.</i>
9. девять . . . . .	девятый, <i>ое, ая, ninth.</i>
10. десять . . . . .	десятый, <i>ое, ая, tenth.</i>
11. одиннадцать . . . . .	одиннадцатый <i>or</i> первый на- десять 11th.
12. двѣнадцать ( <i>sl. двана́дцать</i> ) . . . . .	двѣнадцатый <i>or</i> второй на- десять, 12th.
13. тринадцать . . . . .	тринадцатый <i>or</i> третій на- десять, 13th.
14. четырнадцать . . . . .	четырнадцатый <i>or</i> четвертый на- десять, 14th.
15. пятнадцать . . . . .	пятнадцатый <i>or</i> пятый на-де- сять, 15th.
16. шестнадцать . . . . .	шестнадцатый <i>or</i> шестой на- десять, 16th.
17. семнадцать . . . . .	семнадцатый <i>or</i> седьмой на- десять, 17th.
18. осмнадцать <i>or</i> восемнад- цать . . . . .	осмнадцатый <i>or</i> осьмой на- десять, 18th.
19. девятнадцать . . . . .	девятнадцатый <i>or</i> девятый на- десять, 19th.
20. двадцать ( <i>sl. двад́есять</i> ) . . . . .	двадцатый ( <i>sl. двад́есятый</i> ), <i>ое, ая, 20th.</i>
21. двадцать одинъ . . . . .	двадцать первый, 21st.
22. двадцать два . . . . .	двадцать второй, 22d.
30. тридцать . . . . .	тридцатый, <i>ое, ая, 30th.</i>
40. сорокъ ( <i>sl. четы́редесять</i> ). . . . .	сороковой ( <i>sl. четы́редесятый</i> ), <i>ое, ая, 40th.</i>
50. пятьдесятъ . . . . .	пятидесятый, <i>ое, ая, 50th.</i>

60. шестьдесятъ . . . . .	шестидесятый, ое, ая, 60th.
70. семьдесятъ . . . . .	семидесятый, ое, ая, 70th.
80. восемьдесятъ . . . . .	осмидесятый, ое, ая, 80th.
90. девяносто ( <i>sl. девять-десять</i> ) . . . . .	девяностый ( <i>sl. девяностый</i> ) 90th.
100. сто . . . . .	сотый, ое, ая, hundredth.
200. двѣсти . . . . .	двухъ-сотый, ое, ая, 200th.
300. триста . . . . .	трѣхъ-сотый, ое, ая, 300th.
400. четыреста . . . . .	четырёхъ-сотый, ое, ая, 400th.
500. пятьсотъ . . . . .	пятисотый, ое, ая, 500th.
600. шестьсотъ . . . . .	шестисотый, ое, ая, 600th.
700. семьсотъ . . . . .	семисотый, ое, ая, 700th.
800. восемьсотъ . . . . .	осмисотый, ое, ая, 800th.
900. девятьсотъ . . . . .	девятисотый, ое, ая, 900th.
1000. тысяча ( <i>sl. тысяща</i> ) . . . . .	тысячный, ое, ая, thousandth.
2000. двѣ тысячи . . . . .	двухъ-тысячный, ое, ая, two thousandth.
10,000. десять тысячъ ( <i>sl. тма</i> ) . . . . .	десятитысячный, ое, ая, ten thousandth.
100,000. сто тысячъ . . . . .	стотысячный, ое, ая, 100-thousandth.
1,000,000. миллионъ . . . . .	миллионный, ое, ая, millionth.
2,000,000. два миллиона . . . . .	двухъ-миллионный, ое, ая, two millionth.
1,000,000,000. тысяча мил- ліоновъ . . . . .	тысячемиллионный, ое, ая, 1000-millionth.
1,000,000,000,000. биліонъ . . . . .	биліонный, ое, ая, billionth.

To the cardinal numerals belong the *fractional* (дрѣбныя) numerals, such as: половѣна, *the half*; третъ, *the third*; четъверть, *the fourth*; осьмѣха, *the eighth*; полторá, *one and a half*; полтретья, *two and a half*; полчетвертá, *three and a half*, &c.; and to the ordinal numerals belong also the circumstantial adjectives другóй, *other*, and послѣдній, *last*: другóй being used instead of вторóй, *second*, and послѣдній being opposed to пѣрвый, *first*.

From the cardinal numerals *два, три*, &c. as far as *десять*, as also from *сто*, are formed the *collective* (собрáтельныя) numerals: *двое, трое, четверо, пятеро*, &c., *десятеро, сотеро*. The following words also belong to the collective numerals: *оба* (*f. оба*), *both*; *двóйка, two*; *трóйка, three*; *пятóк, five*; *десяток, ten*; *дюжина, a dozen*; *сóтня, a hundred*.

The numerals *одинъ* and *первый* are also used as qualifying adjectives, and in that case take some inflections peculiar to adjectives. *Одинъ* takes the augmentative termination *одинёхонекъ* and *одинёшенекъ*; and *первый* takes the diminutive termination *первенькйй*, as also the inflection of the superlative *первѣйшйй* or *самый первый*.

42. — As regards declension, the numerals may be considered as substantive and adjective. The *substantive* numerals are: *сорокъ, сто, девяносто, тысяча, миллионъ, половина, треть f., пятóк, десятокъ, дюжина*, &c. The gender of these, as also their declension, is indicated by their termination. All the ordinal numbers, and the cardinal *одинъ*, are numerals adjective. All the other numerals are sometimes adjective, requiring the same case as the nouns to which they are joined, and sometimes substantive, in which occasion they require the noun to which they belong to be put in the genitive case, as will be seen later. Some of the last mentioned have the inflections of nouns, while others have inflections peculiar to themselves. A general view of the declension of the numerals may be obtained from the following table.

Declension  
of the  
numerals.

## PARADIGMS OF THE DECLENSION OF THE NUMERALS.

PARAD.	Nom. or Accus.	Gen. or Acc.	Dative.	Instrum.	Prepos.
1.	<i>m. odin, n. odno, f. odna, one</i> . . . . . (See its declension in the <i>Primenen.</i> paragr. 15).				
2.	<i>m. n. dva, f. dvh, two</i> . . . . .	двухъ . . . . .	двумъ . . . . .	двуми . . . . .	двухъ . . . . .
3.	<i>m. n. tri, f. tri, three</i> . . . . .	трехъ . . . . .	тремъ . . . . .	тремя . . . . .	трехъ . . . . .
4.	<i>четыре, four</i> . . . . .	четырёхъ . . . . .	четыремъ . . . . .	четырьмя . . . . .	четырёхъ . . . . .
5.	<i>пять, five</i> . . . . .	пяти . . . . .	пяти . . . . .	пятью . . . . .	пяти . . . . .
6.	<i>шесть, six</i> . . . . .	шести . . . . .	шести . . . . .	шестью . . . . .	шести . . . . .
7.	<i>семь, seven</i> . . . . .	семи . . . . .	семи . . . . .	семью . . . . .	семи . . . . .
8.	<i>восемь, eight</i> . . . . .	восьми . . . . .	восьми . . . . .	восемью . . . . .	восьми . . . . .
9.	<i>девять, nine</i> . . . . .	деяти . . . . .	деяти . . . . .	девятю . . . . .	деяти . . . . .
10.	<i>десять, ten</i> . . . . .	десяти . . . . .	десяти . . . . .	десятью . . . . .	десяти . . . . .
11.	<i>двадцать, two hundred</i> . . . . .	двухъ сотъ . . . . .	двумъ стамъ . . . . .	двуми стамъ . . . . .	двухъ стамъ . . . . .
12.	<i>тридцать, three hundred</i> . . . . .	тати сотъ . . . . .	тати стамъ . . . . .	тати стамъ . . . . .	тати стамъ . . . . .
13.	<i>м. n. sto, one and a half</i> . . . . .	политру . . . . .	политру . . . . .	политрою . . . . .	политрою . . . . .
14.	<i>м. n. sto, one and a half</i> . . . . .	политру . . . . .	политру . . . . .	политрою . . . . .	политрою . . . . .
15.	<i>политру . . . . .</i>	политру . . . . .	политру . . . . .	политрою . . . . .	политрою . . . . .
16.	<i>политру . . . . .</i>	политру . . . . .	политру . . . . .	политрою . . . . .	политрою . . . . .

With respect to the *tonic accent* in the declension of the numerals we may remark, that it is generally placed on the inflections of the cases, as happens in all the numerals from *odinъ* to *desyatъ*, and from *desyatsya* to *sosemьdesyatъ*, as also in *doze, trise, chetvero* and other similar words. The numerals *namъ, uesemъ*, &c. as far as *desyatъ*, as also *desyatsya* and *mpidatsya*, while they are declined as feminine nouns in *a*, differ from them in the accent, which is placed on the last vowel in all the cases: *namъ, namyô, desyatъ, desyatnyô*, &c., whilst in the nouns the accent is transposed only in the prepositional case: *въ связи, въ тмъ, &c.* The numeral *sopekъ*, which is declined like nouns in *a*, differs from them in the accent; for no dissyllabic noun can, without the elision of the vowel, transfer its accent from the first syllable to the inflection of the cases, as happens in *sopekъ; sopekъ, sopekъ*, &c.



According to the 6th and 7th paradigms (двое and четверо) are declined the similar collective numerals; viz:

6th par.) Трое and трои, three.	Шестеро and шестеры, six.
О'бое and бои, two.	Десятеро and десятеры, ten.
7th par.) Пятеро and пятеры, five.	Сотеро and сотеры, hundred.

*Двое, троє, четверо*, &c., are used with the names of animate beings of the masculine and neuter gender; and *двои, трои, четверы*, &c., with the names of inanimate and abstract objects which only occur in the plural; e. g. двое слугъ, *two servants*; трои часы, *three watches*. We may still observe that *обое* had formerly a singular, the genitive, *обоего*, of which is still found in the expression: жители обоего пола, *the natives of both sexes*.

According to the 8th and 10th paradigms (пять and пятьдесятъ) are declined the similar numbers following, with the exception of *всеми*, which is declined by the 9th paradigm; e. g.

8th par.) Шесть, six, <i>ген.</i> шестѣ.	Тридцать, thirty, <i>ген.</i> тридцатѣ.
Семь, seven, <i>семѣ</i> .	[десяти.]
Девять, nine, <i>девятѣ</i> .	10th par.) Шестьдесятъ, sixty, <i>шестѣ</i> .
Десять, ten, <i>десятѣ</i> .	Семьдесятъ, seventy, <i>семѣ</i> .
Одиннадцать, eleven, <i>одиннадцатѣ</i> .	Восьмьдесятъ, eighty, <i>осьмьдесятѣ</i> .
Двадцать, twenty, <i>двадцатѣ</i> .	

The first member *всеми* of the last word is declined according to the 9th paradigm: *ген.* осьмьдесятѣ, *instr.* восемьдесятѣю or осьмьдесятѣю.

According to the 11th and 12th paradigms (двѣсти and пятьсотъ) are declined the following numerals; viz:

11th par.) Триста, three hundred, <i>ген.</i> трѣхъ сотѣ.	Семьсотъ, 700, <i>ген.</i> семи сотѣ.
Четыреста, 400, <i>четырёхъ</i>	Восемьсотъ, 800, <i>осьми сотѣ</i> .
12th par.) Шестьсотъ, 600, <i>шести сотѣ</i> .	Девятьсотъ, 900, <i>девяти сотѣ</i> .

*Дѣйстви* (instead of *двѣста*) is the Slavonic dual of сто, and was used with два and оба, as we shall see later.

According to the 13th paradigm (полторѣ) are declined such numerals as are formed of полъ, *the half*, with the apocopated genitive of the ordinal number, with the exception of *полтретья*, which is declined according to the 14th paradigm: e. g.

Получетверта, three and a half, *gen.* полу́четверта; *sem.* полчетверти.  
 Полпята, four and a half, . . . полу́пята; . . . полпяти.  
 Полшестя, five and a half, . . . полу́шестя; . . . полшести.  
 Полдесята, nine and a half, . . . полу́десята; . . . полдесяти.

The compound numeral *полтора́ста*, *a hundred and fifty* (*a hundred and a half*) forms *полу́тора́ста* in all the oblique cases. All these words, however, with the exception of *полтора́* and *полтора́ста*, are antiquated, and no longer used.

According to the 15th and 16th paradigms (*полдень* and *полу́но́чь*) are declined such nouns as are formed with the numeral *полъ*, *the half*; e. g.

15th p.) Полуно́чь, midnight, <i>gen.</i> полу́ночи.	Полсло́ва, half a word, <i>gen.</i> полусло́ва.
16th p.) Полчася́, half an hour, полу́чася́.	Полмину́ты, half a minute, полу́мину́ты.
Полдня́, half a day, полу́дня.	Полверста́, half a verst, полуверста́.
Полведре́, half a pail, полуведре́.	Полфу́нта, half a pound, полуфу́нта.

We must remark that the numeral *полъ* is joined to substantives in the genitive singular, to indicate *a half*, with the exception of *полу́день* and *полу́ночь*, which signify *the middle of the day* or *of the night*, *midday* or *midnight*. All these nouns are declined by joining *полу́* to the other cases of the simple substantive. We have still to add that *полу́день* takes in the prepositional with *по* the inflection *и* (instead of *ю*); thus we say: *по полу́дню*, *after noon*. Such nouns as have *полу́* in the nominative singular, as *полу́островъ*, *a peninsula*; *полу́мѣсяцъ*, *a crescent*, are declined like simple substantives.

In the compound cardinal numerals, such as: *два́дцать два*, *twenty two*; *три́дцать пять*, *thirty five*; *сто шесть*, *a hundred and six*, each number is declined separately; *G.* *двадцати́ двухъ*, *тридцати́ пяти́*, *ста́ шести́*, &c. But when they form ordinal numerals, such as: *два́дцать пе́рвый*, *twenty first*; *сто второ́й*, *hundred and second*, the ordinal number only is declined, and the cardinal numerals remain indeclinable; *G.* *два́дцать пе́рваго*, *сто второ́го*. The same is the case with *на́десять*, in the compound numbers; e. g. *пе́рвый-на́десять*, *eleventh*; *второ́й-на́десять*, *twelfth*, where the first part, *пе́рвый*, *второ́й*, is alone declined.

The other numerals follow the declension of the nouns or adjectives to which by their termination they belong. Thus

сорокъ, *forty*; миллионъ, *million*; десятокъ, *ten*, follow the first declensions of substantives (§ 30, *gen.* сорока, миллиона, десятка); сто, *a hundred*, and девяносто, *ninety*, follow the second; while дюжина, *a dozen*; сотня, *a hundred*; тысяча, *a thousand* (*instr. sing.* тысячею and тысячью) are declined according to the third. On this subject we must observe that the numerals сорокъ, сто and девяносто only follow the declension of the substantives when they are used as nouns to express *forties*, *hundreds* and *nineties*, and then сорокъ and сто have also a plural (сороки, сороковъ; ста, сотъ, &c.); but when they are joined to a substantive, or to another numeral, they take in the *dative* and *instrumental* cases singular the inflection of the genitive (сорока, ста, девяноста), and sometimes even in the *prepositional*, especially with another numeral.

The ordinal numerals, which are all adjectives, terminating in *ый*, or *ий* (*neut. ое, fem. ия*), are declined according to the full termination of the adjectives, with the exception of третій (*n. третье, f. третья*), *third*, which is declined according to the mixed termination (§ 40).

The numerals два, оба, три, четыре, две, трие, четверо, have the accusative like the nominative, when they are with the names of inanimate and abstract objects, and like the genitive, when with the names of animate beings. But all the rest: пять, шесть, семь, двадцать, &c. have always the accusative like the nominative; the same is the case with the numbers два, три, четыре, when joined to tens, hundreds or thousands; as двадцать два, *twenty two*; сто три, *a hundred and three*, &c., even when referring to animate objects; e. g. собрать двадцать два воина (and not двадцать двух воиновъ), *to unite twenty two warriors*.

43. — The cardinal numerals, in Russian, when joined with substantives follow various rules unlike those of any other language. These rules are as follows:

1. Оди́нъ agrees with its substantive in gender, number and case, and in the compound numerals, such as, двадцать оди́нъ, сто оди́нъ, the substantive is always put in the singular.

Special rules  
of the  
numerals.

2. The numerals *два, оба, три, четыре* (and their compounds as *двадцать два, сто четыре, &c.*), *полторá, полтретья́*, and others of the same kind, when employed in the nominative or accusative, require the noun to which they belong, to be put in the *genitive singular*, observing that *два, оба, полторá, полтретья́*, agree in *gender* with the noun. If there is an adjective, it takes the gender of the substantive and is put in the *nominative plural*.—With all the other numerals, from *пять*, as also with *деся́те, мно́го, вѣ́село, нѣ́ско́ло, &c.*, the substantive is put in the *genitive plural*, and if there be an adjective, it agrees with the noun or with the numeral, according to the sense of the phrase. Thus we say: *пе́рвыя два большіе столá, the two first large tables*; and *си́у пять большіихъ столовъ, these five large tables*.

This *genitive singular*, which occurs with the numerals *два, три, четыре*, is simply the Slavonic *dual*, which was used with *два* and *оба*, and which has also been retained in *дѣйстви́ (sl. дѣйстви́ть)*. The numerals *три* and *четыре* were simple adjectives, agreeing with their substantive, while *пять* and the numerals following were considered as collective nouns, always requiring the *genitive plural* after them.

A peculiarity of the Russian language must still be mentioned: it requires the adjective which accompanies the nouns formed of the numerals *полъ* (as *полчасá, półгода*), as also the numerals *полторá, полтретья́*, to be placed in the *nominative plural*: e. g. *пе́рвыя полчасá, the first half hour*. But in the other cases the adjective agrees with the substantive; e. g. *въ продол́женіе пе́рваго получасá, in the space of the first half hour*.

3. With the numerals in the oblique cases, the substantive is always put in the plural. *a)* When the numerals have a gender, as: *пятко́, дюжи́на, тыся́ча, миллио́нъ*, the noun is always put in the *genitive*, and the same rule applies equally to *сороко́* and *сто*, when used in the plural. *b)* With the other numerals, such as: *два, оба, три, четыре, пять, сороко́, девяно́сто, сто, &c.*, the noun agrees with the numeral in *case*. We remark further that in words compounded of two numerals the case of the substantive is determined by the later numeral. Thus we say: *съ тремя́ ста́ми во́иновъ, with three hundred warriors*, and *со ста́ тремя́ во́инами, with a hundred and three warriors*;

въ сорокъ верстахъ. at forty wersts, and сорокъ сороковъ церквей, one thousand six hundred churches (forty forties).

4. With the preposition *no*, indicating the distribution of an equal quantity, the numerals два, три, четыре, даже, пять, четыре, retain the inflection of the nominative, and then the noun is put in the *genitive singular*, but the other numerals are put in the dative (сорокъ, сто and девяносто then take their regular inflection *y*), and the noun is put in the *genitive plural*. Thus we say: по два рубля, по пяти рублѣй, по сороку рублѣй, to each two, five, forty roobles.

The numerals полторá, полтретья, &c., take also with the preposition *no* the inflection *y* of the dative, and the noun in the *genitive singular*: in all other cases the noun and the numeral agree; e. g. по полутору рублѣ, to each a rooble and a half.

## EXERCISES ON THE NUMERALS.

Man has one tongue, one nose, two eyes, У (*gen.*) человекъ (*есть*) одинъ языкъ, одинъ носъ, два глаза, two ears, two cheeks, two arms, two legs, ten fingers два уха, два щека, два рука, два нога, десять палець at the hands and ten toes at the feet, thirty two teeth, на (*prep.*) рука и десять палець на нога, тридцать два зубъ, and seven vertebres. Leap year has four и семь позвонокъ. Въ (*prep.*) високосный годъ (*есть*) четыре seasons, 12 months, 52 weeks and two days, or 366 days, время, 12 мѣсяць, 52 недѣля и два день *m*, или 366 день, or 8784 hours, or 527,040 minutes. The book has a или 8784 часъ, или 527,040 минутъ. Въ (*prep.*) книга (*есть*) hundred leaves less one. The two brothers and the two сто листь безъ (*gen.*) одинъ. Оба братъ и оба sisters. An hour and a half, and a minute and a half. Two сестра. Полтора часъ, и полтора минутъ. Два roobles and a half, and three kopecs and a half. рубль *m* съ (*instr.*) половина и три копейка съ половиною.

The berkovetz has 10 poods; the pood 40 pounds; the  
 Въ (*прп.*) берковецъ (*есмь*) 10 пудъ; въ пудъ 40 фунтъ; въ  
 pound 32 loths; the loth 3 zolotniks; the pound has 96  
 фунтъ 32 лоть; въ лоть 3 золотникъ; въ фунтъ 96  
 zolotniks.  
 золотникъ.

Two beaver-hats, three silk-handkerchiefs, four pen-  
 Два пуховый шляпа, три шелковый платокъ, четыре перо-  
 knives, five cups of porcelain, and six magnificent  
 чинный ножикъ, пять чашка фарфоровый, и шесть прекрасный  
 pictures. These two black crows; these three white feathers;  
 картина. Сии два чёрный воронъ; те три бѣлый перо;  
 my four new books; these five petulant children. The  
 мой четыре новый книга; эти пять рѣзвый дитя. Оба  
 two poor orphan boys, and the two unhappy orphan girls.  
 бѣдный сирота, и оба несчастный сиротѣ.

Two servants, three workmen, four children, six  
 Двое слуга, трое мастеровой, четверо дитя, шестеро  
 soldiers, two watches, three pairs of spectacles, five pairs  
 солдатъ, двои часы *т*, трои очки *т*, пятеры  
 of scissors. The first hour and a half. The first forty days;  
 ножницы *г*. Первый полтора часъ. Первый сорокъ день;  
 the second hundred crowns, and the last thousand florins.  
 второй сто ежимокъ, и послѣдній тысяча гульденъ.

I have bought an ox and a horse, a table and  
 Я купилъ одинъ быкъ и одинъ лошадь *г*, одинъ столъ и  
 a mirror. Twenty one roobles, fifty one  
 одинъ зеркало. Двадцать одинъ рубль *т*, пятьдесятъ одинъ  
 kopecks. The thousand one nights. A young man of thirty  
 копейка. Тысяча и одинъ ночь *г*. Молодой человекъ тридцать  
 one years less twenty one days. Do not judge  
 одинъ годъ безъ (*ген.*) двадцать одинъ день *т*. Не суди

of a man by a single fault and by a single  
 о (*prep.*) человекъ по (*dat.*) одинъ проступокъ и по одинъ  
 error. An officer with twenty one soldiers. Peter  
 ошибка. Офицеръ съ (*instr.*) двадцать одинъ солдатъ. Петръ  
 the First and Catharine the Second reigned in the  
 Пётръ и Екатерина Вторая́ правили въ (*prep.*)  
 eighteenth century. The Swedes revere Charles XII, and  
 восемнадцатый вѣкъ. Шве́ды уважа́ють Карла́ XII, а  
 the French have erected a monument to Henry IV. The  
 Французы поставили памятникъ Генриху́ IV.  
 article was written on the 15th of the month of January,  
 Статья была́ пи́сана (*gen.*) 15 мѣсяцъ январь м.,  
 in the year 1823, and the event relates to the VI  
 годъ 1823, и происшествіе относится къ (*dat.*) VI  
 century, and particularly to the year 573.  
 вѣкъ, а именно къ (*dat.*) годъ 573.

A cupboard with a dozen of plates of porcelain, or  
 Шка́пъ съ (*instr.*) дюжина тарѣлка фарфоровый, или  
 with twelve plates of porcelain. A droshky drawn by  
 съ двѣнадцать тарѣлка фарфоровый. Дро́жки, запряжённый (*instr.*)  
 a pair of bay horses, or by two bay horses; and a carriage  
 пара вороной лошади́, или два вороной лошади́; и карѣта  
 drawn by six sorrel horses, or by a team of six  
 запряжённый (*instr.*) шесть рыжі́й лошади́, или шестѣрка  
 sorrel horses. The town is situated a thousand wersts  
 рыжі́й лошади́. Го́родъ ле́житъ въ (*prep.*) тысяча верста́  
 from here, the village a hundred wersts, and the hamlet forty  
 отсюда, село́ во сто верста́, а дере́вня въ со́рокъ  
 wersts. At Moscow there were 1600 churches, or forty  
 верста́. Въ (*prep.*) Москва́ было 1600 це́рковъ, или со́рокъ  
 forties of churches. I am satisfied with eighty  
 со́рокъ це́рковъ. Я дово́льствуюсь (*instr.*) во́семьдесятъ

roobles (or with two forties of roobles) a month,  
 рубль *m* (или два сорокъ рубль) въ (*acc.*) мѣсяцъ,  
 i. e. with 960 roobles a year. He will not live till  
 то есть 960 рубль въ (*acc.*) годъ. Онъ не доживётъ до (*gen.*)  
 forty years; and she died at forty three. She is  
 сорокъ лѣто; и она умерла (*gen.*) сорокъ три лѣто. Она (*estъ*)  
 satisfied with forty kopecs, and she admired a  
 довольный (*instr.*) сорокъ копейка, и она удивилась (*dat.*)  
 hundred pictures. He cannot live on less than a  
 сто картина. Онъ не можетъ прожить меньше (*gen.*)  
 hundred thousand roobles a year. A town with two  
 сто тысяча рубль *m* въ (*acc.*) годъ. Городъ съ (*instr.*) два  
 towers; a chest with six drawers; a house with forty windows;  
 башня; комодъ съ шесть ящикъ; домъ съ сорокъ окно;  
 a fortress with a hundred cannons; a church with five  
 крѣпость *f* со сто пушка; церковь *f* о (*prep.*) пять  
 cupolas; a house of three stories; a village with four  
 глава; домъ о (*prep.*) три ярусъ; деревня съ (*instr.*) четыре  
 wind-mills. I love equally the two sons and the two  
 вѣтряный мельница. Я люблю равно оба сынъ и оба  
 daughters. He has four children, and she has left five  
 дочь *f*. Онъ имѣетъ четверо дитя, а она оставила пятеро  
 orphans. My brother has not been able to manage these two  
 сиротъ. Мой братъ не могъ слѣдить съ (*instr.*) этими два  
 restive horses. He has lived long with his five  
 упрямый лошади *f*. Онъ жилъ долго съ (*instr.*) своими пять  
 cousins german. To this million of old Prussian  
 братъ двоюродный. Къ (*dat.*) этому миллионъ старый прусскій  
 crowns must be added a thousand of these new roobles.  
 еѣимокъ надобно прибавить тысяча тѣхъ новый рубль *m*.  
 To each a hundred roobles and forty kopecs.  
 Каждый по (*dat.*) сто рубль *m* и по (*dat.*) сорокъ копейка.



Some months have thirty days  
 Въ (*prep.*) нѣкоторый\*мѣсяцъ (*есмь*) по (*dat.*) тридцать день *т*,  
 and others thirty one days. In each coachhouse  
 а въ другой по тридцать одинъ день. Въ (*prep.*) каждый сарай  
 there were two carriages, and in each carriage  
 было по (*nom.*) два карѣта, а въ каждый карѣта по (*nom.*)  
 three men, and four women. To each a hundred and  
 три мужина и по четыре жѣнщина. Каждый по (*dat.*) сто по  
 ninety roobles and forty five kopecks. We  
 девяносто рубль *т* и по сорокъ по пять копейка. У насъ  
 have each twenty seven points. Every part of  
 (*есмь*) по (*dat.*) двѣдцать по семь очки *т*. Каждый часть *ф*  
 the work is sold at the rate of a rooble and a half of silver.  
 сочинѣнiе продаѣтся по (*dat.*) полтора рубль *т* (*instr.*) серебрѣ.

By the morning one must not judge of midday. During  
 По (*dat.*) утро не должно суждѣть о (*prep.*) полдень *т*. Въ (*acc.*)  
 the first half day he did not know what to do. At  
 первый полднѣ онъ не зналъ что дѣлать. Въ (*acc.*)  
 four o' clock in the morning, or at five o' clock in the  
 четыре часъ по (*prep.*) полночь *ф*, или въ пять часъ по  
 afternoon. That happened during the latter half of  
 полдень *т*. Это случилось въ (*acc.*) послѣднѣй полгода  
 the year 1844. The first half hour passed quietly. During  
 годъ 1844. Первый полчаса прошли спокойно. Въ (*acc.*)  
 the space of the first half hour. I had a hundred and  
 продолженiе первый полчаса. За мною было полтораста  
 fifty thousand roobles of annual revenue.  
 тысяча рубль *т* годовоѣй доходъ.

## THE PRONOUNS.

Division  
of the  
pronouns.

44. — The *pronouns* (мѣстоимѣнія) in Russian are divided into seven kinds.

1. The *personal* pronouns (личныя) are, in the first person: я, *I*; plur. мы, *we*; in the second ты, *thou*; plur. вы, *you*; and in the third person онъ, *he* (fem. она, *she*; neut. оно, *it*); plur. они, *they* (fem. онѣ, *they*). There is in Russian another personal pronoun, which is applied to all the three persons and both numbers, and which is used when the action of the object returns on the agent: e. g. я себя знаю, *I know myself*; ты себя бережѣшь, *thou takest care of thyself*; мы себя обманываемъ, *we deceive ourselves*. This is called the *reflected* (возвратное) personal pronoun.

When the reflected pronoun is used at the end of the verbs, it is contracted into *ся* or *сь*; e. g. домъ стрѣтся, *the house is being built*; я моюсь, *I wash myself* (instead of стрѣтъ себя, мою себя).

2. The *possessive* pronouns (притяжательныя) are, in the first person: мой, *my* or *mine*; нашъ, *our* or *ours*; in the second person: твой, *thy* or *thine*: вашъ, *your* or *yours*; and for all the three persons: the reflected свой, *my, thy, his, our, your, their*.

In Russian there is no possessive pronoun for the third person: its place being supplied by the genitive of the personal pronoun: егѡ, *of him* or *his*; ея, *of her* or *her*; ихъ, *of them* or *their*; e. g. я былъ у егѡ брата, *I have been to his brother* (to the brother of him); я знаю ея мужа, *I know her husband* (the husband of her); я это дѣлаю для ихъ дѣтей, *I do that for their children* (for the children of them).

3. The *demonstrative* pronouns (указательныя) are: сей, *this*; тотъ, *that*; такой, *such*; таковѡй, *such* or *such an one*.

4. The *relative* pronouns (относительныя) are: кто, *who* or *he who*; что, *which* or *that which*; который, *who*; какой, каковой, *who* or *he who*; чей, *whose*; сколько, *how much* or *so much*.

5. The *interrogative* pronouns (вопросительныя) are the same as the relative.

6. The *determinative* (опредѣлительныя) or *ampliative* (дополнительныя) pronouns are: самъ, *self*; весь, *all*; каждыи, всякий, *each*. To this class belong also the numerals одинъ, *a single one* or *one only*, and оба, *both*.

The pronouns самъ and самыи have the same meaning, but the former is used with the personal pronouns and with the names of animate objects, the latter with the demonstrative pronouns and the names of inanimate and abstract objects: e. g. я самъ, *myself*; онъ самъ, *himself*; самого себя, *one's self*; отецъ самъ, *the father himself*; тотъ самыи, сей самыи, *the very same*; самая смерть, *death itself*. The pronoun самыи before a qualifying adjective expresses the superlative (§ 38. 3).

7. The *indefinite* pronouns (неопредѣленныя) are: нѣкто, *somebody*; нѣчто, *something*; никто, *nobody*; ничто, *nothing*; кто либо, кто нибѣдь, кто-то, кто ни есть, *whoever*; что либо, что нибѣдь, что-то, что ни есть, *whatever*; нѣкій, нѣкакій, нѣкоторый, какой-то, *some*; ни какой, ни который, ни одинъ, *not any, none*; другой, иной, прочій, *other*; столько, *as much, as far*; нѣсколько, *some*; много, *much*; мало, *little*; другъ друга, *each other*; тотъ и другой, *the one and the other*; всякъ, *each*.

45. — The pronouns are either substantive or adjective. 1) The *substantive* pronouns are: я, ты, онъ, себя, кто, что, нѣкто, нѣчто, никто, ничто,

SINGULAR

The *tonic accent* in the declension of the pronouns is, with some rare exceptions, placed on the terminations of the cases, as is seen in the accompanying paradigms.

of which one only (*она*) has all the three genders; *себя*, *кто*, *что* are the same in both numbers, and *себя* has no nominative. 2) All the other pronouns are *adjective*, and like the adjectives they have three genders, two numbers and seven cases, and agree with the substantive to which they belong.

46. — The substantive pronouns are declined in a peculiar manner as will be seen later. Those of the adjective pronouns which end like the adjectives, in *ый* and *ий* (or *ой*), fem. *ая*, neut. *ое*, such as: *который*, *оный*, *самый*, *каждый*, *такой*, *всякий*, are declined according to the 1st and 2d paradigms of adjectives (§ 41); while such as have a termination differing from that of the adjectives, such as: *мой*, *наш*, *сам*, *сей*, also *такой* and *какой*, are declined in a particular way.

Declension  
of the  
pronouns.

The following observations on the declension of pronouns are necessary.

1. The oblique cases of the pronoun of the third person (3d paradigm) take the euphonic letter *н*, when they are preceded by a preposition; e. g. *у него*, *to him*; *къ нему*, *towards him*; *съ ней*, *with her*; *о немъ*, *of him*; *безъ нихъ*, *without them*, &c. But this addition does not take place when the genitive *его*, *ей*, *ихъ*, serves as a possessive pronoun; e. g. *въ его домъ*, *in his house*; *къ ихъ пользѣ*, *to their advantage*. — The genitive singular feminine of this pronoun sometimes takes the inflection of the accusative; e. g. *я её не видѣлъ* (instead of *ей*), *I have not seen her*; *у неё* (instead of *у ней*), *to her*, and this inflection is sometimes contracted: *у ней*.

2. According to the 5th and 6th paradigms (*кто* and *что*) are declined the pronouns compounded from *кто* and *что*; e. g. *никто*, *nobody*; *ничто*, *nothing*; *нѣкто*, *кто нибудь*, *кто либо*, *кто-то*, *somebody*; *нѣчто*, *что нибудь*, *что либо*, *что-то*, *something*; remarking that, if there be a preposition with *никто* and *ничто*, it is placed between the particle *ни* and the pronoun;

е. г. НИ У КОГО, *to nobody*; НИ КЪ ЧЕМУ, *to nothing*; НИ ЗА ЧТО, *for nothing*; НИ СЪ КѢМЪ, *with nobody*; and also observing that the parts *нибѣдо*, *либо* and *то* are invariable.

3. According to the 7th paradigm (мой) are declined the pronouns твой, *thy*; свой, *his*, and кой, *who*, observing that this last is not used in the nominative and accusative singular of any of the genders, and that it has the tonic accent in all the cases on the first syllable (кого, кон, конихъ, &c.). Its compound нѣкій, *some*, is declined in the same manner in the singular; but in the plural it takes the inflections of the adjectives: *N. нѣкіе, f. нѣкія; G. нѣкихъ, D. нѣкимъ, &c.*

4. According to the 8th paradigm (нашъ) is declined the pronoun вашъ, *your*.

5. According to the 16th paradigm (какой) are declined такой, *such*; нѣкакій, *some*, and этакій, *such an one*.

6. The other pronouns which have the adjective termination *ий* and *ій* or *ой* (fem. *ая*, neut. *ое*), such as: оный, самый, всякій, другой, иной, каковой, таковой, are declined according to the 1st and 2d paradigms of the adjectives (§ 41). The pronouns каковой and таковой have also the apocopated termination: *каковъ* and *таковъ*. In the pronoun другъ друга, *each other*, which is used for the three genders and both numbers, the first part remains indeclinable, while the second is declined like a substantive; *G. другъ друга, D. другъ другу, A. другъ друга, I. другъ другомъ, P. другъ о другъ*. The pronouns самъ-другъ, *two together*; самъ-третей, *three together*, &c., are indeclinable and are used for all the three persons, the three genders and both numbers.

7. The pronoun *всякъ* is used instead of *всякій человекъ*, but only in the masculine singular. The pronouns *сколько*, *столько*, *нѣсколько*, have in the singular, besides this termination which serves both for the nominative and accusative, only the dative in *у* with the preposition *по* (*по сколькоу, &c.*); and in the plural they have only the genitive, the dative, the instrumental and the prepositional cases (*сколькоихъ, сколькоими, &c.*).

8. *Одинъ* (parad. 15) is both a numerative and a determinative pronoun. The same is the case with the Slavonic word

единъ (*м.* едино, *ж.* одина), which is used in an elevated style, and which is declined in the singular like an adjective of the full termination: *Г.* еди́наго, еди́ной; *Д.* еди́ному, &c.; but in the plural it takes the aprocopated form: еди́ны, еди́ныхъ, еди́нымъ.

## EXERCISES ON THE PRONOUNS.

I love thee, and thou offendest me. We esteem him, Personal  
pronouns.  
Я люблю ты, а ты обижаешь я. Я уважаемъ онъ,

as to her, we love her sincerely. I have much money,  
а онъ я любимъ душевно. У (*gen.*) я (*est*) много деньги,  
and thou hast not a penny. Protect him, and  
а у (*gen.*) ты нетъ ни (*gen.*) копейка. Заступи́сь за (*acc.*) онъ, и  
depend upon her. Take a seat with me, and come  
понадѣйся на (*acc.*) онъ. Посиди́ съ (*instr.*) я, и приходи́  
with him. Tell her, to come to me. Without  
съ (*instr.*) онъ. Скажи онъ, чтобъ онъ пришлѣ ко (*dat.*) я. Безъ (*gen.*)  
him, without her and without you, life is wearisome to me.  
онъ, безъ онъ и безъ ты, жизнь (*est*) скучный я.

I do not see them, and I will do every thing for them.  
Я не ви́жу онъ, а я сдѣлаю всё для (*gen.*) онъ.

We esteem you, and you have forgotten us. Depend  
Я уважаемъ ты, а ты забыли я. Будь увѣренъ  
on me; I will speak of thee. It is agreeable to me  
во (*prep.*) я; я поговорю о (*prep.*) ты. (*est*) Приятно я  
to be with her. I do not trust myself, and thou art  
быть съ (*instr.*) онъ. Я не доверяю себя, а ты (*est*)  
contented with thyself. We take care of ourselves, and they  
довольный (*instr.*) себя. Я бережёмъ себя, а онъ  
do themselves harm.  
себя вредятъ.

Possessive pronouns. My brother, thy sister and his son have studied together.  
Мой братъ, твой сестра и онъ сынъ учились вмѣстѣ.

I try to be agreeable to your master and to our  
Я стараюсь угодить вашъ учитель *m* и нашъ  
inspector. My house is more beautiful than thine, and  
смотритель *m*. Мой домъ (*есть*) красивый (*gen.*) твой, а  
thy dog is less than mine. I live without them,  
твой собака (*есть*) малый (*gen.*) мой. Я живу безъ (*gen.*) онъ,  
and I can dispense with their help. Do not boast  
и могу обойтись безъ (*gen.*) онъ помощи. Не хвались (*instr.*)  
of thy labours, and think of thy years. Draw near  
свой трудъ, а подумай о (*prep.*) свой лѣто. Подойди къ (*dat.*)  
my table, and give some money to thy sister. We talk  
мой столъ, и подари (*gen.*) деньги твоей сестра. Я говоримъ  
about our affairs, and you occupy yourself with your lesson.  
о (*prep.*) свой дѣло, а ты занимаетесь (*instr.*) свой урокъ.  
Study is bitter, but its fruits are sweet. Thy gardens  
Ученіе (*есть*) горькій, но онъ плодъ (*суть*) сладкій. Твой садъ  
are superb; I admire their beauties.  
(*суть*) прекрасный; я удивляюсь онъ (*dat.*) красотѣ.

Demonstrative pronouns. Dost thou see this dog and this cat, these men and  
Видишь ли этотъ собака и этотъ котъ, этотъ люди *m* и  
those trees? In these countries there is no gold; and  
тотъ дерево? Въ (*prep.*) этотъ земля нѣтъ (*gen.*) золота; и  
in those no silver. I have heard that from  
въ (*prep.*) тотъ нѣтъ (*gen.*) серебро. Я слышалъ этотъ отъ (*gen.*)  
your brother, but I do not believe it. I praise your  
вашъ братъ, но я не вѣрю (*dat.*) этотъ. Я хвалю вашъ  
project; it is long since I had foreseen it. Have you  
намѣреніе; давно я предвидѣлъ оный. Живешь ли  
lived long in this town? I admire this garden,  
ты давно въ (*prep.*) сей городъ? Я удивляюсь (*dat.*) этотъ садъ,



but that is more beautiful. These pens are blunt; these  
 а тотъ (*есть*) хоро́шій. Э́тотъ перо́ (*суть*) тупо́й; сей  
 houses are of stone; these streets are narrow. Such eyes  
 домо́ ка́менный; то́тъ у́лица у́зкій. Тако́й глаза́  
 are piercing; such actions do not do honour.  
 (*суть*) про́ницательный; тако́й дѣ́лю не прино́сять (*ген.*) че́сть.

Such are men.  
 Таковы́й (*суть*) люди́ *т.*

The relative pronouns agree in *gender* and *number* with the substantive to which they belong, and take the *case* required by the following verb, with the exception of the pronoun *чей*, which agrees in gender, number and case with the accompanying substantive. Relative pronouns.

The man whom you see, is very intelligent.  
 Чело́вѣкъ, кото́рый ты ви́дишь, (*есть*) о́чень у́мный.

The book which you read is very agreeable. I know  
 Кни́га, кото́рый ты чита́ешь, (*есть*) о́чень прі́ятный. Я зна́ю  
 the affair of which you speak. The water with which  
 дѣ́лю, о (*преп.*) кото́рый ты говори́те. Во́да, (*instr.*) кото́рый

I wash myself, is very cold. Beware of him who  
 я мою́сь, (*есть*) о́чень холо́дный. Береги́сь (*ген.*) то́тъ, кто  
 flatters thee. He who has much business,  
 льсти́тъ (*dat.*) ты. То́тъ у (*ген.*) кто (*есть*) мно́го (*ген.*) дѣ́лю,  
 does not think of pleasures. Learn that which  
 не ду́маетъ о (*преп.*) заба́ва. Учи́тесь (*dat.*) то́тъ, (*ген.*)

you are ignorant of. Here is cloth like that of which I  
 что ты не зна́ете. Вотъ (*nom.*) сукно́ тако́й, како́й я  
 bought some. Such was the chief, such were the soldiers.  
 купи́лъ. Каковы́й былъ военача́льникъ, тако́й и во́ня.

That is the friend, in whose hands is my destiny.  
 Вотъ (*nom.*) дру́гъ, въ (*преп.*) че́й рука́ (*есть*) мой судьба́.

Listen to those in whose house thou hast lived.  
 Слу́шайся (*ген.*) то́тъ, въ (*преп.*) че́й домо́ ты жи́лъ.

There is a book (*of those*) such as there are few of, and  
 Вотъ книга (*изъ gen. такой*), (*gen.*) какой (*есть*) мало, и  
 an opportunity like those are rare.  
 случай каковой (*суть*) рѣдкій.

Interroga-  
 tive pro-  
 nouns.

What o'clock is it, and at what o'clock wilt  
 Который часъ (*есть*), и въ (*prep.*) который часъ

thou come? With what books dost thou occupy thyself, and  
 придёшь? (*instr.*) Какой книга занимаешься, и

what people live here? Under what chief  
 какой люди *т* живуть здѣсь? Подъ (*instr.*) который начальникъ

dost thou serve, and what language dost thou learn? Whose  
 ты служишь, и (*dat.*) какой языкъ ты учишься? Чей

are these houses? By whose permission hast thou  
 (*суть*) этотъ домъ? Съ (*gen.*) чей позволеніе ты вышелъ

gone out? I have not seen whose hat has been thrown  
 со двора? Я не видѣлъ, чей шляпа брошена

to the ground. I do not know with whose children she  
 на (*acc.*) полъ. Я не знаю, съ (*instr.*) чей дитя онъ

is walking. About what dost thou trouble thyself, and  
 гуляетъ. О (*prep.*) что ты заботишься, и

in what way have I deserved thy friendship? On what  
 (*instr.*) что я заслужилъ твою дружбу? Съ (*instr.*) что

can one congratulate thee, and from whom hast thou  
 можно поздравить ты, и отъ (*gen.*) кто ты

received this money? How many wersts are there  
 получилъ этотъ деньги? Сколько (*gen.*) верста (*есть*) отъ

from this town to that? Of how many volumes  
 (*gen.*) этотъ городъ до (*gen.*) тотъ? Изъ (*gen.*) сколько томъ

is this work composed? How many roobles  
 сей сочиненіе состоитъ? По (*dat.*) сколько (*gen.*) рубль *т*

will fall to you to each of this profit?  
 достанется ты изъ (*gen.*) этотъ прибылъ?

Thou thyself wilt be of my opinion: the sound even of his <sup>Determinative pronouns.</sup>  
 Ты самъ согласишься съ (*instr.*) я: звукъ самый онъ  
 voice is agreeable. I take this apartment of the  
 голосъ (*еств.*) приятный. Я нанимаю сей квартира у (*gen.*)  
 proprietor himself. Vices themselves find with you an  
 хозяинъ самъ. Порокъ самый находятъ у (*gen.*) ты  
 excuse. He always speaks of himself. You are  
 извиненіе. Онъ всегда говоритъ о (*prep.*) себя самъ. Ты (*еств.*)  
 discontented with yourselves. We have seen her herself.  
 недовольный (*instr.*) себя самъ. Я видѣли онъ самъ.  
 Death itself is not frightful. We all content ourselves  
 Смерть *f* самый (*еств.*) не страшный. Я весь довольствуемся  
 with our only salaries. So think women alone. We  
 (*instr.*) одинъ жалованье. Такъ думаютъ женщины одинъ. Я  
 two will serve God alone. In each assembly  
 оба хотимъ служить (*dat.*) Богъ одинъ. Въ (*prep.*) каждый собраніе  
 there were citizens of both sexes. They are scattered  
 были гражданъ оба полъ. Онъ (*сущ.*) разсыяны  
 in all the world. One must accustom one's self to  
 по (*dat.*) весь свѣтъ. Надобно привыкать къ (*dat.*)  
 every food.  
 всякій пища.

There is not anybody here; do not ask help <sup>of Indefinite pronouns.</sup>  
 Нѣтъ (*gen.*) никто здѣсь; не проси *f* у (*gen.*)  
 anybody. Thou eatest nothing, and that serves no  
 никто. Ты не ѣшь (*gen.*) ничто, и этого не годится къ (*dat.*)  
 purpose. Learn something, and say that to somebody.  
 ничто. Учись (*dat.*) что нибудь, и скажи этого кто нибудь.  
 I will not sell my house for any thing in the world, and  
 Я не продамъ (*gen.*) свой домъ за (*acc.*) ничто, и  
 you have sold yours for a mere nothing. Of nothing  
 ты продали свой за ничто. Изъ (*gen.*) ничто

one can make nothing. During the space of some  
 не сдѣлаешь (*gen.*) ничто́. Въ (*acc.*) течѣніе нѣсколько  
 months he has bought every day some  
 мѣсяцъ онъ покупалъ ежедневно по (*dat.*) нѣсколько (*gen.*)  
 hundreds of peasants.  
 сто душѣ.

The two sisters speak badly of each other. The  
 Оба сестра́ говорятъ дурно́ другъ о (*prep.*) другъ.

Englishmen and the French detest each other. We are  
 Англичани́нъ и Францу́зъ ненавидя́тъ другъ друга́. Я  
 going to take a walk with one another. These houses  
 ходи́мъ гуля́ть другъ съ (*instr.*) другъ. Сей домъ  
 are situated one behind the other. The boards are thrown  
 лежа́тъ одинъ за (*instr.*) друго́й. Доска́ (*суть*) набро́саны  
 one with another.  
 одинъ съ (*instr.*) друго́й.

#### THE VERB.

Division of  
 verbs.

47. — The *verbs* (глаго́лы) of the Russian language are divided, according to their meaning, into four classes, which are called *voices* (зало́ги), viz:

1. The *active verbs* (дѣйствительные), such as: дѣлать, *to make*; любить, *to love*; мыть, *to wash*; одѣвать, *to clothe*.

2. The *pronominal verbs* (мѣстоимѣнные), formed of active verbs by means of the reflected pronoun *ся*, contracted from *себя́*. These verbs are: *a*) *reflected* (возвратные), as: мыться, *to wash one's self*; одѣваться, *to dress one's self*; *б*) *reciprocal* (взаимные), as: обниматься, *to embrace each other*; ссориться, *to dispute with each other*; and *с*) *common* (общіе), which with the termination of reflected

and reciprocal verbs have an active or neuter meaning, as: боя́ться, *to fear*; сме́яться, *to laugh*.

3. The *neuter* verbs (сре́дние), as: спать, *to sleep*; сто́ять, *to stand*. To this class also belong the *inchoative* (начи́нательные), as: бѣлѣть, *to whiten, become white*; со́хнуть, *to dry, become dry*. Among these verbs two are to be distinguished from the rest; viz: the neuter verb бы́ть, *to be*, and the inchoative ста́ть, *to become*, which help to form and conjugate the other verbs, and which on that account are called *auxiliaries* ( вспомо́гательные).

4. The *passive* verbs (стра́дательные), as: бы́ть любя́мымъ, *to be loved*; бы́ть почита́емымъ, *to be venerated*; дѣло сдѣлано, *the thing is accomplished*.

The reflected voice is often used in the passive sense, especially when applied to inanimate objects, e. g. дѣло дѣлается, *the thing is being accomplished*; домъ стро́ится, *the house is being built*.

48. — The principal inflections of the Russian verbs are: *tense* (вре́мя), *aspect* (ви́дъ) and *mood* (накло́неніе), and the secondary inflections are: *person* (лицѣ), *number* (число́) and *gender* (ро́дъ). Inflections of the verb.

49. — The *tenses* of the Russian verbs are only Tenses. three in number: 1) the *present* (настоя́щее вре́мя); 2) the *preterit* (проше́дшее), and 3) the *future* (бу́дущее), as: я чита́ю, *I read*; я чита́лъ, *I have read*; я бу́ду чита́ть, *I shall read*.

50. — Though the Russian verbs have only Aspects. these three tenses, they have other inflections to indicate duration, accomplishment, reiteration, or other circumstances accompanying the action. These shades, or varieties of meaning, to which the Russian grammarians have given the name of *aspects* or

*degrees*, are expressed by a change of termination or by means of the prepositions. The prepositions, being joined to verbs, form the *prepositional* (предложные) verbs, while such as have no preposition are termed *simple* (простые) or *a-prepositional*. This division of the verbs has an influence on the number and nature of their aspects. The following are the aspects of the Russian verbs.

1. The *imperfect* aspect (несовершенный видъ), which indicates that the action is being, has been, or will be performed without intimating, whether it is or will be finished; e. g. я дѣлаю, *I make*; я дѣлалъ, *I was occupied to make*; я буду дѣлать, *I shall make*; я просматриваю, *I examine*, я просматривалъ, *I set about examining*; я буду просматривать, *I shall examine*. This aspect is subdivided into definite and indefinite.

a) The *definite* (определённый) imperfect aspect indicates that the action is performed at a given moment: e. g. птица летитъ, *the bird flies (is flying now)*; заяцъ бѣжитъ, *the hare runs (is running at this moment)*.

b) The *indefinite* (неопределённый) imperfect aspect expresses the action in an indeterminate manner, without reference to the time when it is performed, and also indicates that the acting person is accustomed to perform, or has the power of performing the action: e. g. птицы летаютъ, *the birds fly (have the power of flying)*; зайцы бѣгаютъ, *the hares run (are accustomed to run)*.

The definite and indefinite meaning of the imperfect aspect is not marked by any particular inflection, except in the case of verbs which express movement or change of place. The

other verbs, having properly speaking only the indefinite imperfect aspect, take the definite meaning without changing their termination; e. g. *Василій теперь пьётъ квасъ*, *Basil is now drinking kwass*; *Василій пьётъ и квасъ и воду, что попадётся*, *Basil drinks both kwass and water, whichever happens to be there*.

2. The *perfect aspect* (совершенный), which indicates that the action has been, or will be entirely finished; e. g. *я сдѣлалъ*, *I have made, I have finished*; *я сдѣлаю*, *I shall make, I shall finish making*; *я просмотрѣлъ*, *I have entirely examined*; *я просмотрю*, *I shall finish examining*. This aspect is subdivided into aspect of duration and aspect of unity.

a) The perfect aspect of *duration* (длительный) indicates that the action has been, or will be performed by many movements, and has had or will have any duration; e. g. *птицы выклевали ему глаза*, *the birds have put out his eyes with beak-strokes*; *я пропою пѣсню*, *I shall sing over this air*.

b) The perfect aspect of *unity* (однократный) indicates that the action has been, or will be performed only once, and has lasted only a moment; e. g. *я зевнулъ*, *I have yawned, I have made a yawn*; *онъ тронетъ ещё разъ ваше хладное сердце*, *he will once more touch your insensible heart*; *птица выклонула ему глазъ*, *the bird has put out to him an eye*.

3. The *iterative aspect* (многократный), which indicates that the action has been performed repeatedly, and that it is long passed; e. g. *въ молодья лета я живалъ въ деревнѣ*, *in my youth I often lived in the country*.

On the subject of these aspects we have to make the following observations:

1. They are never all found in a single verb, as we shall see later. We merely observe in this place that the imperfect, perfect of unity and iterative aspects are found in the simple verbs, while the perfect of duration is met with in the prepositional and some few simple verbs, enumerated further (§ 65. 8). The aspects of a simple verb are generally distinguished in the following manner: the *definite imperfect* aspect is found in verbs signifying movement; e. g. бѣгѣть, *I run (am running now)*; иду, *I go (am going at this moment)*; the aspect *perfect of unity* is found in verbs which designate a physical action of men or animals, and ends in нуль (preterit нулъ, future ну); e. g. шагнѣть, *to take a step*; кашлянуль, *to cough once*; the *iterative* aspect usually ends in *ивать* or *ивать* (preterit *ивалъ* or *ивалъ*); e. g. дѣлывалъ, *he usually made*; говаривалъ, *he said at different times*. The other simple verbs, which have not these distinctive characters, are of the *indefinite imperfect* aspect. All these properties of the verbs will be examined subsequently (§§ 59—65).

2. The prepositions are particles which are joined to verbs to communicate to them the meaning of the completion of an action: e. g. дѣлать, *to make*, and сдѣлать, *to finish making, to have made*; писать, *to write*; and написать, *to finish writing, to have written*; and also to give them a particular meaning; e. g. хотѣть, *to go*, and входить, *to go in*; восходить, *to go up*; выходить, *to go out*; доходить, *to go up to, to attain*, &c.

3. The aspects have not all the same number of tenses; the imperfect aspect is used in all the three tenses; the perfect is employed in the preterit and future, while the iterative is met with only in the preterit.

Moods. 51. — The Russian verbs have only three *moods*, viz: 1) the *indicative* (изъявительное наклонѣніе), e. g. я хожу, *I walk*; мы гуляли, *we have taken a walk*, вы будете ѣздить, *you will sup*; 2) the *imperative* (повелительное), e. g. ходи, *walk*; пойдемте, *let us go*; гуляйте, *take a walk*; and 3) the



*infinitive* (неокончательное), e. g. ходить, *to walk*; гулять, *to take a walk*; жить, *to sup.*—The indicative is the only mood which is found in all the tenses and all the aspects, the infinitive has inflections for the aspects, but has no tenses, as is also the case with the imperative, except that it is not used in the iterative aspect.

The *conditional* (предположительное) and *subjunctive* (составительное) moods of other languages are expressed in Russian by the preterit of indicative with the particle *бы*; e. g. я желал бы ехать, *I should wish or I should have wished to depart*; я бы не думал, чтобы вы это сделали, *I should not have believed that you would have done that*.

52.—The indicative and imperative of the Russian verbs have further: 1) three inflections for the *persons*, e. g. читаю, *I read*; читаешь, *thou readest*; читаетъ, *he reads*; 2) two for the *numbers*; читаю, *I read*, and читаемъ, *we read*; читаешь, *thou readest*, and читаете, *you read*; читаетъ, *he reads*, and читаютъ, *they read*; читай, *read*, and читайте, *read (you)*; and 3) in the singular of the preterits, three for the *genders*, e. g. ученикъ читалъ, *the school-boy read*; дитя читало, *the child read*; служанка читала, *the maid read*.

The preterit of the Russian verbs is nothing but the past participle, in the apocopated form, joined to the substantive verb, which participle, like the attributive adjectives, was used, in the ecclesiastical Slavonic, in the apocopated termination, and with the three genders, e. g. азъ есмь сотворилъ, *I have created*; имѣла еси, *thou hast had* (in speaking to a woman). In Russian the auxiliary verb is understood, and we say: я сотворилъ, ты имѣла, and on this account the genders have become an inflection of the preterits.

There are some verbs which are only used in the third person singular, without expressing the person either by a

noun or a pronoun, and which for that reason are called *impersonal* (безличные). These verbs have only the neuter in the preterit; such are: *пѣть*, *there is not* (*pret.* не было, *fut.* не будетъ); *разсвѣтаетъ*, *it begins to dawn* (*pret.* разсвѣло, *fut.* разсвѣтитъ); *хочется*, *the mind takes* (*pret.* хотѣлось).

Forms deriv-  
ed from the  
verb.

53.—To complete our examination of all the parts of the Russian verbs, we will still add the forms which are derived from them; these are: 1) the *participle* (причастіе), 2) the *gerund* (дѣпричастіе), and 3) the *verbal noun* (отглагольное имя).

1. The *participles*, as parts of the verb, have voice, aspect and tense; and as adjectives, gender, number and case. As regards *voice*, they are active, neuter or pronominal, and passive; they have the same number of *aspects* as the verbs from which they are derived; but they have only two *tenses*, the present and the preterit.

2. The *gerunds* are simply verbal adverbs, which are formed from the active and neuter participles and can take the different aspects of the present and preterit.

3. The *verbal nouns* are abstract nouns which being derived from the infinitive, indicate the particular action, expressed by the aspect, from which they are formed; e. g. бѣганіе, *an habitual running*; разбиваніе, *a defeat*; разбиіе, *a complete defeat* (from the infinitives бѣгать, разбивать and разбиіть).

Conjugation. 54.—The changing of the inflections of the verbs in order to indicate the moods, tenses, numbers, persons and genders, is called *conjugation* (спряженіе); and the verbs are divided, according to the

manner in which they are conjugated, into *regular* (правильные) and *irregular* (неправильные). 1) The *regular* verbs are such as have a polysyllabic infinitive, ending in *ть* preceded by a vowel; e. g. дѣлать, *to make*; гулять, *to take a walk*; имѣть, *to have*; говорить, *to speak*; колѣть, *to sting*; тянуть, *to draw*; терѣть, *to rub*. 2) The *irregular* verbs are such as have a monosyllabic infinitive, ending either in *ть* preceded by a consonant, or in *чь*, *ти* and *ти*; e. g. бить, *to beat*; брать, *to take*; слыть, *to pass for*; вѣсть, *to conduct*; грызть, *to gnaw*; идти, *to go*; сѣчь, *to cut*.—The following remarks on the conjugation of verbs are important.

1. Each aspect of a verb, having necessarily an infinitive, is conjugated separately, without being mixed up with the other aspects of this verb.

2. The *infinitive* in verbs is the same as the nominative in nouns: this mood is the *direct* form, whence all the others, called the *oblique*, are derived. It ends in *ть* (seldom in *чь*, *ти*, *ти*).

3. The *present*, which is only found in the imperfect aspect (either definite or indefinite), ends, in the first person of the singular, in *ю* or *ь* (very rarely in *ю* and *ю*).

4. The *preterit*, which is found in all the aspects, ends in *лъ* and sometimes in *ъ* (neut. *ло*, fem. *ла*; plur. *ли*).

5. The *future* has no particular inflection: in the imperfect aspect (either definite or indefinite) it is formed by the help of the auxiliary verbs *бѣду* or *смѣну*, joined to the infinitive; and in the perfect aspect (either of duration or of unity) this tense takes the form of the present.

6. The *imperative*, which is found in all the aspects, excepting the iterative aspect, ends, in the second person singular, in *и* with the accent, or, without accent, in *и* after two or three consonants, in *и* after one consonant and in *и* after a vowel.

## CONJUGATIONS OF REGULAR VERBS,

		FIRST											
		1st branch.		2d branch.		3rd branch.		4th branch.		1st branch.		2d branch.	
						consonant.		vowel.		vowel. conson.			
		ать		оать еать		ять		ять		отъ		б нть б м нть м п нть п ф	

ACTIVE, NEUTER AND PRONOMINAL.

SECOND.					THIRD.		
3rd branch.	4th branch.	5th branch.	6th branch.	7th branch.	1st branch.	2d branch.	
ас ч нтъ и атъ щ	нть : тъ з атъ з нтъ ъ	и нтъ т атъ тъ к атъ	нть с атъ тъ с атъ	нть с к атъ тъ с к атъ	нуть	ереть	
ж ч нтъ ш нмъ щ нте а нтъ	ж у ж у и нтъ ж етъ и нтъ ж етъ и нтъ ж етъ и нтъ ж етъ и нтъ ж етъ и нтъ ж етъ	ч у ч у т нтъ ч етъ т нтъ ч етъ т нтъ ч етъ т нтъ ч етъ т нтъ ч етъ т нтъ ч етъ	ш у ш у с нтъ ш етъ с нтъ ш етъ с нтъ ш етъ с нтъ ш етъ с нтъ ш етъ с нтъ ш етъ	щ у щ у с нтъ щ етъ с нтъ щ етъ с нтъ щ етъ с нтъ щ етъ с нтъ щ етъ с нтъ щ етъ	н у н етъ н етъ н етъ н етъ н етъ н етъ	р у р етъ р етъ р етъ р етъ р етъ р етъ	
ж ч ш ш щ а нтъ	и нтъ г з а нтъ и нтъ д а нтъ и нтъ г з а нтъ и нтъ д а нтъ и нтъ г з а нтъ и нтъ д а нтъ	и нтъ т к а нтъ и нтъ т к а нтъ и нтъ т к а нтъ и нтъ т к а нтъ и нтъ т к а нтъ и нтъ т к а нтъ	с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ	с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ	н у нтъ н у нтъ н у нтъ н у нтъ н у нтъ н у нтъ	е р етъ е р етъ е р етъ е р етъ е р етъ е р етъ	
ж ч ш ш щ а нтъ	и нтъ г з а нтъ и нтъ д а нтъ и нтъ г з а нтъ и нтъ д а нтъ и нтъ г з а нтъ и нтъ д а нтъ	и нтъ т к а нтъ и нтъ т к а нтъ и нтъ т к а нтъ и нтъ т к а нтъ и нтъ т к а нтъ и нтъ т к а нтъ	с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ	с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ	н у нтъ н у нтъ н у нтъ н у нтъ н у нтъ н у нтъ	е р етъ е р етъ е р етъ е р етъ е р етъ е р етъ	
either	definite	or	indefinite)	for	the	three	conjugations.
ж ч ш ш щ а нтъ	и нтъ г з а нтъ и нтъ д а нтъ и нтъ г з а нтъ и нтъ д а нтъ и нтъ г з а нтъ и нтъ д а нтъ	и нтъ т к а нтъ и нтъ т к а нтъ и нтъ т к а нтъ и нтъ т к а нтъ и нтъ т к а нтъ и нтъ т к а нтъ	с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ	с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ	с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ с нтъ с к а нтъ	н у нтъ н у нтъ н у нтъ н у нтъ н у нтъ н у нтъ	е р етъ е р етъ е р етъ е р етъ е р етъ е р етъ

Regular verbs.

55.—The *regular verbs* are divided into three *conjugations*, according to the ending of the infinitive and the formation of the first person of the present.

1. The *first conjugation* embraces the verbs ending in the infinitive in *mb* with one of the vowels *a*, *я* or *ь*, and of which the first person singular of the present is in *ю* with a vowel. This conjugation is subdivided into four *branches*, viz:

	1st branch.	2d branch.	3rd branch.	4th branch.
Infinitive:	... ать . . . .	... <sup>о</sup> вать . . . .	... ять . . . .	... ёть
		е		
Present:	... аю . . . .	... <sup>у</sup> ю . . . .	... яю . . . .	... ёю
		ю		

Examples: 1) дѣлать, *to make*, дѣлаю; 2) рисовать, *to draw*, рисую; плевать, *to spit*, плюю; 3) гулять, *to take a walk*, гуляю; 4) имѣть, *to have*, имѣю.

2. The *second conjugation* embraces such verbs as end in the infinitive in *mb* preceded by *u* or *o*, and by other vowels with a changeable consonant, and the first person in the present of which is in *ю* preceded by a consonant (sometimes by a vowel) or, according to the nature of the hissing letters, in *юу*, *чу*, *шу* and *щу*. This conjugation is subdivided into 7 *branches*, in the following order:

	1st br.	2d br.	3rd br.	4th br.	5th br.	6th br.	7th br.
	о						
Infinitive:	п	в нть	ж	нть	т нть	с нть	нть
	ѣ ть	м ѣть	ч нть	л ѣть	т ѣть	с ѣть	ст ѣть
	о	п ать	ш ать	з ать	к ать	х ать	ск ать
		ф	щ				
Present:	ю . .	лю .	у . .	жу . .	чу . .	шу . .	щу .

Examples: 1) говорить, *to speak*, говорю; велѣть, *to order*, велю; колѣть, *to sting*, колю; 2) любить, *to love*, люблю; терпѣть,

to suffer, терпѣю; дремать, to slumber, дремлю; 3) тужить, to grieve, тужу; кричать, to cry, кричу; 4) водить, to lead, вожу; видѣть, to see, вижу; мазать, to anoint, мажу; 5) платить, to pay, плачу; вертѣть, to turn, верчу; плакать, to weep, плачу; 6) просить, to ask, прошу; висѣть, to be suspended, виси; пахать, to cultivate, паху; 7) чистить, to clean, чищу; хрустѣть, to crack, хрущу; искать, to seek, ищу.

3. The *third* conjugation embraces the verbs ending in the infinitive in *нѣтъ* and in *есть*, the first person of which is in *ѣ* preceded by a palatal consonant (*и, р*). This conjugation is subdivided into 2 branches, thus:

	1st branch.	2d branch.
Infinitive: . . . . .	нѣтъ . . . . .	есть
Present: . . . . .	нѣ . . . . .	ѣ

Examples: 1) тянѣть, to draw, тяну; 2) терѣть, to rub, тру.

The three conjugations of the regular verbs and their various branches, as also the inflections of the moods, tenses and persons, are shown in the preceding table (pages 120 sq.).

56.—In the conjugation of the regular verbs the following rules relating to the formation of the various inflections are to be attended to.

Formation  
of the in-  
flections of  
the verb.

1. The *second person* of the present is formed: *a*) from the first person in all the verbs of the 1st and IIIrd conjugation, as also in those of the IIrd in *омѣ*, and in *амѣ* when not preceded by a hissing consonant, by changing *ю* or *ѣ* into *ѣшь*; *b*) from the infinitive in the verbs of the IIrd conjugation ending in *нѣтъ*, *нѣтъ*, and in *амѣ* preceded by a hissing consonant, by changing *нѣтъ*, *нѣтъ* or *амѣ* into *нѣшь*. The other persons are formed from the second. The present has generally the following inflections:

PERSONS:	SINGULAR.			
	1.	2.	3.	4.
1.	ю . . . . .	у . . . . .	ю . . . . .	у . . . . .
2.	ешъ . . . . .	ешъ . . . . .	ишъ . . . . .	ишъ . . . . .
3.	етъ . . . . .	етъ . . . . .	итъ . . . . .	итъ . . . . .
	PLURAL.			
	1.	2.	3.	4.
1.	емъ . . . . .	емъ . . . . .	имъ . . . . .	имъ . . . . .
2.	ете . . . . .	ете . . . . .	ите . . . . .	ите . . . . .
3.	ють . . . . .	утъ . . . . .	ятъ . . . . .	ятъ (атъ)
<p>For verbs of the I conjug. and for those in <i>омъ</i>, 1st br. and in <i>амъ</i>, 2d br. of the II conj. (See the parad. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 10 and 12.)</p> <p>For verbs of the III conjug. and for those in <i>амъ</i>, 4th, 5th, 6th and 7th br. of the II conj. (See the paradigms 15, 17, 19, 21, 22, 23, 24 and 25.)</p> <p>For verbs of the II conjug. 1st and 2d br. (except those in <i>омъ</i> and in <i>амъ</i>). (See the paradigms 8, 9, and 11.)</p> <p>For verbs of the II conjug., 3rd, 4th, 5th, 6th and 7th br. (except those in <i>амъ</i> not preceded by a hissing letter). (See the paradigms 13, 14, 16, 18 and 20.)</p>				

The third person of the plural ends in *амъ* (instead of *амъ*) after the hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), and this for the verbs of the third branch of the II d conjugation. (See paradigm 13).

2. The *preterit* in verbs of the 1st and II d conjugation is formed from the infinitive by changing *тъ* into *лъ* (*фет. ла, neut. ло; plur. ли*). The inchoative verbs of the III d conjugation syncopate the termination *ну-лъ* into *ъ* (*фет. ла, neut. ло; plur. ли*), by suppressing the consonant *л* in the masculine, when no vowel immediately precedes; e. g. *сохъ, вялъ* (*фет. сохла, вяла, neut. сохло, вяло*), instead of *сохнулъ, вянулъ*, from *сохнуть, to dry; вянуть, to fade*. Occasionally the full form is used: e. g. *мёрзнуть, to freeze, мёрзнулъ*; but in the inchoative prepositional verbs, the preterit is almost always syncopated, and this sometimes happens also in the aspect perfect of unity; e. g. *замёрзнуть, to freeze, замёрзъ, воздвигнуть, to erect, воздвигъ* (instead of *замёрзнулъ, воздвигнулъ*).

The non-inchoative verbs, as also the perfect aspect of unity, retain the termination *нулъ*; e. g. *тянулъ, двинулъ*, from *тянуть, to draw; двинуть, to move once*. The verbs of the 2d branch of the III d conjugation also syncopate the termination of the preterit. (See the paradigms 22, 23, 24 and 25.)

3. The *imperative* ends in the second person of the singular in *и, ъ, ѱ, ѱ* or *и, ѱ*, and is formed from the second person of



the present (or from the future, in the perfect aspect of duration or of unity), by changing *еиѣ* or *иѣѣ*:

a) into *ѣ*, if the accent is on the termination of the infinitive (paradigms 8, 10, 11, 12, 15, 16, 18, 19, 21, 22);

b) into *ѣ*, if the accent is not on the termination of the infinitive (paradigms 13, 14, 17 and 24);

c) into *и*, if, without having the accent, the termination of the inf. is preceded by two or three consonants (paradigms 20 & 23);

d) into *ѣ*, if the inflection *еиѣ* or *иѣѣ* of the second person is preceded by a vowel (paradigms 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 and 9). The verbs in *иѣѣ* preceded by a vowel, and with the accent on the last syllable, also take the inflection *ѣ*, e. g. таѣть, *to hide*; поѣть, *to water*; клеѣть, *to paste*; imper.: таѣ, поѣ, клеѣ.

The second person of the plural is formed by adding the syllable *ме* to the inflection of the second person of the singular. The other persons have no peculiar inflection. The first person of the plural takes that of the future; e. g. бѣдемъ учѣться, *let us study*; поѣдемъ, *let us go*, and sometimes adding the syllable *ме*, поѣдемъ. The third person in both numbers takes that of the present or the future, preceded by the conjunctions *пусть* or *да*, e. g. пусть говорѣть, *let him speak*; да здравствуетъ, *let him live*; да бѣдутъ, *let them be*.

The second person singular of the imperative is sometimes used with the personal pronouns of the first and third person, in order to express the *conditional* mood; e. g. сдѣлайъ это я, *if I should do that*; сдѣлайъ это онъ, *if he were to do that*; instead of *если бы я* (or *онъ*) *это сдѣлалъ*. In the same manner the phrases: сохрани Богъ, *God preserve!* дай Богъ, *God grant!* take the place of the *optative* mood.

*Rem.* There are some regular verbs which deviate slightly from the general rules, undergoing a trifling change either in the 1st person of the pres., or in the imper., as we shall subsequently point out. We remark lastly that there is but one verb which has its imper. in *ѣ*; it is the irregular verb *лечь*, *to lie down*; imper.: лягъ, pl. лягте.

57.—Observing these different rules for the formation of the moods, tenses and persons, the active, neuter and pronominal regular Russian verbs are conjugated according to the 25 following paradigms.

Paradigms  
of the con-  
jugations of  
regular  
verbs.

## PARADIGMS OF THE THREE CONJUG.

CONJUGATIONS:	PARADIGMS:	I. INFINITIVE.		II. IND I					
				I. PRESENT.					
				Singular.			Plural.		
FIRST	1.	1.	дѣлать, to make. . . . .	дѣлаю,	дѣла-ешь.	еть; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	
		2.	толковать, to explain. . .	толкую,	толку-ешь.	еть; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	
		3.	воевать, to war. . . . .	воюю,	вою-ешь.	еть; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	
		4.	жевать, to chew. . . . .	жую,	жу-ешь.	еть; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	
		5.	гулять, to take a walk. . .	гуляю,	гуля-ешь.	еть; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	
		6.	сеять, to sow. . . . .	сею,	се-ешь.	еть; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	
		7.	желтѣть, to grow yellow.	желтѣю,	желтѣ-ешь.	еть; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	
SECOND	1.	8.	хвалить, to praise. . . . .	хваляю,	хваля-ишь.	ишь; имъ.	ите,	ятъ.	
		9.	строить, to build. . . . .	строю,	стро-ишь.	ишь; имъ.	ите,	ятъ.	
		10.	колоть, to sting. . . . .	колю,	кол-ишь.	ишь; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	
	2.	11.	любить, to love. . . . .	люблю,	люб-ишь.	ишь; имъ.	ите,	ятъ.	
		12.	дремать, to slumber. . .	дремлю,	дремл-ишь.	ишь; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	
	3.	13.	мучить, to torment. . . .	мучу,	муч-ишь.	ишь; имъ.	ите,	ятъ.	
		14.	ладить, to tune. . . . .	лажду,	лад-ишь.	ишь; имъ.	ите,	ятъ.	
	4.	15.	вязать, to tie. . . . .	вязку,	вяж-ишь.	ишь; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	
		16.	плакать, to pay. . . . .	плачу,	плач-ишь.	ишь; имъ.	ите,	ятъ.	
	5.	17.	плакать, to weep. . . . .	плачу,	плач-ишь.	ишь; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	
		18.	просить, to ask. . . . .	прошу,	прос-ишь.	ишь; имъ.	ите,	ятъ.	
THIRD	1.	19.	писать, to write. . . . .	пишу,	пиш-ишь.	ишь; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	
		20.	чищать, to clean. . . . .	чищу,	чист-ишь.	ишь; имъ.	ите,	ятъ.	
		21.	искать, to seek. . . . .	ищу,	ищ-ишь.	ишь; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	
	2.	22.	тянуть, to draw. . . . .	тяну,	тян-ишь.	ишь; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	
		23.	сохнуть, to dry. . . . .	сохну,	сохн-ишь.	ишь; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	
THIRD	2.	24.	выцветать, to fade. . . . .	выцвѣту,	выцвѣ-ишь.	ишь; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	
		25.	тереть, to rub. . . . .	тру,	тр-ишь.	ишь; емъ.	ете,	ютъ.	

With respect to the use of the *tonic accent* in the conjugations of regular verbs, the following rules are to be observed.

1. The first person of the present takes the accent of the infinitive, with the exception of the verbs in *оса́тъ* and *еса́тъ*, in which the last syllable is accented. These verbs transfer the accent on the penultima, if this termination belongs to a derivative verb; but if the syllable *ос* or *ес* belongs to the root of the verb, they preserve the accent on the last syllable; thus *толкова́тъ*, *воева́тъ* (parad. 2 and 3) have in the present *толку́ю*, *вою́ю*; while *жева́тъ* (parad. 4) has *жу́ю*; and also *кова́тъ*, *to forge*, *ку́ю*; *плева́тъ*, *to spit*, *плю́ю*. The other persons of the present preserve the accent of the first person, with the exception of several verbs of the IId and IIId conjugation, accented on the last syllable, which transfer the accent on the penultima in the second and other persons of the singular and plural. (See the paradigms 8, 10, 11, 12, 15, 16, 18, 19, 21 and 22.)

## GATIONS OF REGULAR VERBS.

## C A T I V E.

## II. PRETERIT.

## Singular.

## Plural.

	3 genders.		
	masc.	neut.	fem.
<i>я, ты, онъ, она, оно</i>	дѣлалъ.	дѣло.	дѣлала.
	толковалъ.	дѣло.	дѣлала.
	воевалъ.	дѣло.	дѣлала.
	женился.	дѣло.	дѣлала.
	гулялъ.	дѣло.	дѣлала.
	спалъ.	дѣло.	дѣлала.
	желтелъ.	дѣло.	дѣлала.

3 genders.		
masc.	neut.	fem.
дѣлали.	дѣлали.	дѣлали.
толковали.	дѣлали.	дѣлали.
воевали.	дѣлали.	дѣлали.
женули.	дѣлали.	дѣлали.
гуляли.	дѣлали.	дѣлали.
спали.	дѣлали.	дѣлали.
желтели.	дѣлали.	дѣлали.

<i>я, мы, онъ, она, оно</i>	хвалилъ.	хвало.	хвалила.
	строилъ.	хвало.	строила.
	колѣлъ.	хвало.	колѣла.
	любилъ.	хвало.	любила.
	дремалъ.	хвало.	дремала.
	мучилъ.	хвало.	мучила.
	мѣлилъ.	хвало.	мѣлила.
	вязалъ.	хвало.	вязала.
	платилъ.	хвало.	платила.
	плакалъ.	хвало.	плакала.
	просилъ.	хвало.	просила.
	писалъ.	хвало.	писала.
	чистилъ.	хвало.	чистила.
	искалъ.	хвало.	искала.

3 genders.		
masc.	neut.	fem.
хвалили.	хвалили.	хвалили.
строили.	хвалили.	строили.
колѣли.	хвалили.	колѣли.
любили.	хвалили.	любили.
дремали.	хвалили.	дремали.
мучили.	хвалили.	мучили.
мѣлили.	хвалили.	мѣлили.
вязали.	хвалили.	вязали.
платили.	хвалили.	платили.
плакали.	хвалили.	плакали.
просили.	хвалили.	просили.
писали.	хвалили.	писали.
чистили.	хвалили.	чистили.
искали.	хвалили.	искали.

<i>я, мы, онъ</i>	танѣлъ.	танѣло.	танѣла.
	сохѣлъ.	сохѣло.	сохѣла.
	вѣлъ.	вѣло.	вѣла.
	тѣръ.	тѣро.	тѣра.

3 genders.		
masc.	neut.	fem.
танѣли.	танѣли.	танѣли.
сохѣли.	сохѣли.	сохѣли.
вѣли.	вѣли.	вѣли.
тѣрили.	тѣрили.	тѣрили.

## III. IMPERATIVE.

## 2d pers.

## Sing.

## Plur.

дѣлай.	йте.
толкуй.	йте.
воюй.	йте.
жуй.	йте.
гулай.	йте.
сѣй.	йте.
желтай.	йте.

хвали.	йте.
строй.	йте.
колѣ.	йте.
любй.	йте.
дремли.	йте.
мучь.	йте.
мѣль.	йте.
вязай.	йте.
платй.	йте.
плачь.	йте.
просй.	йте.
писй.	йте.
чисти.	йте.
ищи.	йте.

бѣху or сѣху (онъ, етъ; вы, етъ, утъ) with the infinitive.

2. The preterit retains the accentuation of the infinitive, and that in all the inflections, excepted *родить*, to bring forth, *прѣ. родилъ, f. родила, n. родило, pl. родили*, and some verbs of the IIIrd conjugation, which, as well as the irregular verbs, follow the rules of adjectives in the apocopated termination, i. e. the accent is often transferred to the last syllable, sometimes only in the feminine gender, and at other times in the neuter and in the plural, as we shall see later.

3. The accentuation of the imperative is above indicated in the formation of this mood.  
4. The pronominal verbs preserve the accentuation of the active verbs; however some of these verbs transfer the accent to the reflected pronoun *ся*, as *родился, he is born, заперся, it shut itself up*; but that happens only in the masculine gender; in the feminine and neuter, as well as in the plural, the accent is placed on the syllable which precedes the pronoun (*родилась, заперлась, &c.*). This transferring happens above all in the monosyllable verbs, as *звался, взялся, дался, &c.*

First conjugation.

According to the 1st paradigm (дѣлать) are conjugated verbs in *амь*, as well simple as prepositional (with the exception of those in *оамь* and *еамь*, which belong to the three following paradigms, and of several in *амь*, which are of the second conjugation). Such are:

Болтать, to shake, <i>pres.</i> болтаю.	Уповать, to hope, <i>pres.</i> уповаю.
Виплать, to crown, выплаю.	Обожать, to adore, обожаю.
Дерзать, to dare, дерзаю.	Отвѣчать, to answer, отвѣчаю.
Думать, to think, думаю.	Объщать, to promise, общаю.
Ласкать, to caress, ласкаю.	Отдѣлывать, to finish, отдѣлываю.
Питать, to assay, питаю.	Усматривать, to perceive, усматриваю.
Печатать, to print, печатаю.	Закрывать, to cover, закрываю.
Работать, to work, работаю.	Надмевать, to render proud, надмеваю.
Питать, to nourish, питаю.	Обуревать, to agitate, обуреваю.
Нюхать, to smell, нюхаю.	Отмщевать, to avenge, отмщеваю.
Терзать, to worry, терзаю.	Здороваться, to salute, здороваюсь.
Умничать, to subtilize, умничаю.	Касаться, to concern, касаюсь.
Ужасать, to terrify, ужасаю.	Намѣряться, to purpose, -ваюсь.

Also давать, to give, as the prepositional verbs узнавать, to know; доставать, to procure (and with other prepositions) and создавать, to build, which have in the present: даю, узнаю, достаю and создаю, and in the imperative: давай, узнавай, доставай and создавай. — Some prepositional verbs in *ивать*, e. g. показывать, to show; указывать, to indicate; помазывать, to anoint; исповѣдывать, to confess, belong also to the following branch, having the present tense in *иваю* and in *ую*: показываю and показую, помазываю and помазую, &c.

According to the 2nd paradigm (толковать) are conjugated verbs in *овать* (with the exception of *уповать* and *здороваться* which belong to the precedent paradigm), which have in the present *ую*, observing that those in *овать* accented on the last syllable transfer the accent to *у*, if this termination belongs to a derivative verb, but they preserve it on the last syllable, if the syllable *ов* belongs to the root of the verb. Such are:

Ворковать, to soo, <i>pres.</i> воркую.	Зимовать, to winter, <i>pres.</i> зимую.
Торговать, to traffic, торгую.	Именовать, to name, именую.
Баловать, to cocker, балую.	Цѣловать, to kiss, цѣлую.
Ковать, to forge, кою.	Рисовать, to draw, рисую.
Сновать, to warp, сную.	Образовать, to form, образую.
Совать, to shove, сую.	Радовать, to rejoice, радую.

Требовать, to require, *pres.* требую. Приветствовать, to welcome, *pres.*  
 Чувствовать, to feel, чувствую. приветствую.  
 Советовать, to counsel, советую. Повиноваться, to obey, повинуюсь.  
 Милловать, to have pity, милую. юсь.

According to the 3d paradigm (воевать) are conjugated verbs in *евать* (with the exception of those in *евать* preceded by a hissing consonant, which belong to the following paradigm, and of *надлежать*, *обуреывать*, *отмучивать* and *наимприваться*, which belong to the first paradigm), which have in the present *юю*, with the same observation relatively to the tonic accent as for verbs in *овать*. Such are:

Горевать, to grieve, *pres.* горюю. Клевать, to peck, *pres.* клюю.  
 Дневать, to pass the day, дняю. Плевать, to spit, плюю.  
 Утреневать, to pass the morning, Блевать, to vomit, блюю.  
 Малевать, to paint, маляю. [-нюю. Пеклевать, to bolt, пекляю.

According to the 4th paradigm (жевать) are conjugated verbs in *евать* preceded by a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), which have in the present *ую* (instead of *юю*); such are:

Врачевать, to cure, *pres.* врачую. Тушевать, to wash a drawing, *pres.*  
 Кочевать, to nomadize, кочую. тушую.  
 Ночевать, to pass the night, ночую. Хвощевать, to rub with horse-tail, хвощую.  
 Межевать, to survey, межую.  
 Бушевать, to howl, бушую. Потчевать, to regale, потчую.

This last verb is also written *подчивать*, and then it belongs to the first branch, having in the present: *подчиваю*.

According to the 5th paradigm (гулять) are conjugated all the verbs in *ать* preceded by a consonant, as well simple as prepositional, and also four simple verbs in *ать* preceded by a vowel, and some prepositional verbs in *оать*, in which *ать* is contracted from *ивать*. These verbs have the present in *аю*. Such are:

Валать, to roll, *pres.* валию.\* Утолять, to quench, *pres.* утоляю.  
 Вонять, to stink, воняю. Извинять, to excuse, извиняю.  
 Кашлять, to cough, кашляю. Повторять, to verify, повторяю.  
 Мьнять, to change, мьняю. Утомлять, to fatigue, утомляю.  
 Козырять, to trump, козыряю. Ваять, to sculpture, ваяю.  
 Кривлять, to contort, кривляю. Зиять, to gape, зияю.  
 Терять, to lose, теряю. Паять, to solder, паяю.  
 Стрелять, to shoot, стреляю. Сиять, to shine, сияю.  
 Являть, to show, являю. Устроить, to arrange, устраиваю.  
 Кланяться, to salute, кланяюсь. Удвоить, to double, удваиваю.

According to the 6th paradigm (сѣять) are conjugated verbs in *ять* preceded by a vowel (with the exception of those which belong to the precedent paradigm, and of *стоять* and *бояться*, which belong to the first branch of the II<sup>d</sup> conjugation). They have the present in *ю*; such are:

Бѣать, to speak, <i>pres.</i> бѣю.	Таять, to thaw, <i>pres.</i> таю.
Блѣять, to bleach, блѣю.	Чаять, to hope, чаю.
Вопіять, to cry, вопію.	Чуять, to hear, чую.
Вѣять, to blow, вѣю.	Каяться, to do penance, каюсь.
Грѣять, to croak, грѣю.	Маяться, to languish, маюсь.
Лелѣять, to cocker, лелѣю.	Смѣяться, to laugh, смѣюсь.

According to the 7th paradigm (желѣть) are conjugated the inchoative and some other verbs in *ѣть*, which have the present in *ю*, (the non-inchoative in *ѣть* belong to the various branches of the second conjugation). Such are:

Бѣлѣть, to grow white, <i>pres.</i> бѣлѣю.	Рижѣть, to grow rufous, <i>pres.</i> рижѣю.
Голубѣть, to become azure, голубѣю.	Грубѣть, to grow harsh, грубѣю.
Соловѣть, to grow light bay, соловѣю.	Чернѣть, to grow black, чернѣю.
Рабѣть, to become freckled, рабѣю.	Потѣть, to sweat, потѣю.
Краснѣть, to grow red, краснѣю.	Пламенѣть, to flame, пламенѣю.
Владѣть, to possess, владѣю.	Колѣть, to starve, колѣю.
Глазѣть, to gaze, глазѣю.	Коснѣть, to linger, коснѣю.
Говѣть, to keep fast, говѣю.	Печатлѣть, to impress, печатлѣю.
Долѣть, to overcome, долѣю.	Имѣть, to have, имѣю.
Жалѣть, to have pity, жалѣю.	Умѣть, to know, умѣю.
Синѣть, to grow blue, синѣю.	Радѣть, to take care, радѣю.
Сѣдѣть, to grow grey, сѣдѣю.	Болѣть, to ache, болѣю.

The verb *болѣть* belongs also to the first branch of the II<sup>d</sup> conjugation, having in the present *болѣю* and *болѣю*, *болѣешь* and *болѣишь*, &c. — The prepositional verb *выздоровѣть*, to recover (perfect aspect of *выздоровѣливать*), belongs also to the second branch of the II<sup>d</sup> conjugation, having in the future *выздоровѣю* and *выздоровѣю*, but only in the first person, the others being: *выздоровѣешь*, *еть*, &c.

Second conjugation. According to the 8th paradigm (хвалѣть) are conjugated verbs in *ѣть* preceded by a palatal consonant (л, н, р), and also by another consonant, as those, non-inchoative, in *лѣть*, *нѣть*, *рѣть*, observing that several verbs of the second conjugation, accented in the infinitive and in the first person of the present on the last syllable, transfer the accent to the penultima in the second and other persons of the present. Such are:

Бранить, to scold, <i>pres.</i> браню, бранишь.	Коймить, to edge, <i>pres.</i> коймю, -ишь.
Веселить, to divert, веселю, веселишь.	Клеймить, to stamp, клеймю, -ишь.
Винить, to accuse, виню, винишь.	Гудить, to fiddle, гудю, гудишь.
Вбрызгивать, to besprinkle, вбрызгиваю, вбрызгиваешь.	Дудить, to pipe, дудю, дудишь.
Говорить, to speak, говорю, говоришь.	Мерзить, to abhor, мерзю, мерзишь.
Смолить, to pitch, смолю, смолишь.	Тузить, to stuff, тузю, тузишь.
Дѣлить, to divide, дѣлю, дѣлишь.	Кудесить, to juggle, кудесю, кудесяшь.
Скоблить, to scrape, скоблю, скоблишь.	Чудесить, to behave oddly, чудесю, чудесяшь.
Дразнить, to provoke, дразню, дразнишь.	Велѣть, to order, велю, велишь.
Хоронить, to hide, хороню, хоронишь.	Горѣть, to burn, горю, горяшь.
Курить, to smoke, курю, куришь.	Звѣчать, to sound, звеню, звенишь.
Варить, to boil, варию, варишь.	Смотрѣть, to look, смотрю, смотришь.

And also **МЫСЛИТЬ**, to think, which changes *c* into *и* in the first person of the present: **мыслию**, **мыслишь**, &c.: *imperative*: **мысли**; and the prepositional verb **ИЗОСТРИТЬ**, to sharpen (perfect aspect of *изошарить*), which changes *ст* into *иц* in the first person of the future: **изошарю**, **изошаришь**, &c.

According to the 9th paradigm (**СТРОИТЬ**) are conjugated verbs in **ишь** preceded by a vowel, as the two simple verbs in **оать**, observing that the verbs in **ишь** of this branch, accented on the last syllable, have the imperative in **и**. Such are:

Двойть, to double, <i>pres.</i> двою; <i>imp.</i> двои.	Стоить, to cost, <i>pres.</i> стою; <i>imp.</i> стой.
Доить, to milk, дою; дои.	Своить, to appropriate, свою; свей.
Клейть, to glue, клею; клей.	Поконить, to give up, поконю; поконь.
Пойть, to give to drink, пою; пой.	Ройться, to swarm, рою; роись.
Кройть, to cut, крою; крой.	Стаить, to fly in flocks, стаюсь; стаись.
Струить, to pour, струю; струй.	Бойться, to fear, боюсь; бойся.
Тайть, to hide, таю; тай.	Стойть, to stand, стою; стой.

According to the 10th paradigm (**КОЛОТЬ**) are conjugated verbs in **оть**, as two verbs in **ать**; these are:

Бороть, to vanquish, <i>pres.</i> борю, борешь.	Пороть, to rip, <i>pres.</i> порю, порешь.
Бороться, to wrestle, борюсь, боюсь.	Глаголать, to say, глаголю, глаголюсь.
Полоть, to weed, полю, полешь.	Орать, to plough, орю, орешь.

And also **МОЛОТЬ**, to grind, which has in the present: **мелю**, **мелешь**, &c. and in the imperative **мелю** (instead of **молю**, **милешь**, **молю**, not to be confounded with **молю**, **молитесь**),

МОЛІ, from МОЛІТЬ, *to pray*). — The verb *опа́ть* in the sense of *to cry* belongs to the third conjugation.

According to the 11th paradigm (ЛЮБИ́ТЬ) are conjugated verbs in *ить* preceded by a labial consonant (б, в, м, п, ф), as the non-inchoatives in *бѣть*, *лѣть*, *пѣть*, which insert the consonant *л* in the first person of the present (with the exception of *кле́и́мъ* and *ко́и́мъ*, which belong to the first branch of the II d conjugation, of *и́мѣть* and *у́мѣть*, which belong to the 4th branch of the 1st conjugation, and of *и́и́бѣть*, which belongs to the first branch of the III d conjugation). Such are:

Руби́ть, to hew, <i>pres.</i> рублю́, руби́шь.	Рѣзѣ́ться, to sport, <i>pres.</i> рѣзѣ́люсь, рѣзѣ́шься.
Зноби́ть, to chill, зноблю́, зноби́шь.	Скорби́ть, to sorrow, скорблю́, роби́шь.
Груби́ть, to be saucy, грублю́, груби́шь.	Сверби́ть, to itch, сверблю́, сверби́шь.
Лови́ть, to catch, ловлю́, лови́шь.	Гре́мѣть, to thunder, гре́млю́, гре́мишь.
Гото́вить, to prepare, гото́влю, гото́вишь.	Шумѣ́ть, to racket, шумлю́, шуми́шь.
Ды́мѣть, to smoke, ды́млю, ды́мишь.	Кипѣ́ть, to boil, киплю́, кипи́шь.
Корми́ть, to nourish, кормлю́, корми́шь.	Кори́ть, to work, кори́лю, кори́шь.
То́пѣть, to heat, то́плю, то́пишь.	Со́нѣть, to wheeze, со́нлю, со́нишь.
Лѣ́пи́ть, to mould, лѣ́плю, лѣ́пишь.	Скри́пѣть, to creak, скри́плю, скри́пишь.
Гра́фи́ть, to rule, гра́плю, гра́фишь.	Терпи́ть, to suffer, терплю́, терпи́шь.
Тра́фи́ть, to hit, тра́плю, тра́фишь.	Хра́пѣть, to snore, хра́плю, хра́пишь.
Нра́вѣ́ться, to please, нра́влюсь, нра́вишься.	Хра́пѣть, to croak, хра́плю, хра́пишь.
	Шипѣ́ть, to hiss, шиплю́, шипи́шь.

And also the prepositional verb *умерѣ́и́ть*, *to put to death* (perfect aspect of *у́мерщѣ́и́ти*), which changes *т* into *ц* in the first person of the future: *умерщѣ́лю*, *умерщѣ́ишь*, &c.

According to the 12th paradigm (ДРЕМА́ТЬ) are conjugated verbs in *бать*, *мать*, *пать*, which insert also the consonant *л* in the first person of the present, and retain it in the other persons as in all the inflections derivated from this first person. These are:

Зыба́ть, to wave, <i>pres.</i> зыблю́, зы́блешь.	And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation. [зоба́ю.
Колеба́ть, to shake, колеблю́, коле́блешь.	Зоба́ть, to peck up, <i>pres.</i> зоблю́, зоба́ю.
Клепа́ть, to impute, кле́плю, кле́плешь.	Ка́пать, to drop, ка́плю and ка́паю.
Трепа́ть, to scutch, треплю́, трéплешь.	Кра́пать, to dash, кра́плю and кра́паю.
Щепа́ть, to chip, щеплю́, щéплешь.	Хрома́ть, to be lame, хро́млю and хро́маю.
Щипа́ть, to pinch, щиплю́, щи́плешь.	
Сы́пать, to strew, сы́плю, сы́плешь ( <i>imper.</i> сы́пь, instead of <i>сып</i> лю).	



And also *имѣть*, to take, which now is used only with a preposition, as *принимать*, to receive, *pres. приѣмлю* and *принимѣю*, and with other prepositions.

According to the 13th paradigm (*мѣчить*) are conjugated verbs in *ить* and *ать* with a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), as one verb in *ить* (with the exception of the verbs in *ать*, which belong in the first conjugation). Such are:

Нѣжить, to nurse, <i>pres. нѣжу</i> , нѣ- жишь.	[дружишь. Лежать, to lie, лежѹ, лежишь.
Дружить, to make friends, дружѹ, Корчить, to shrivel, корчѹ, корчишь.	Держать, to hold, держѹ, держишь. Кричать, to cry, кричѹ, кричишь.
Страшить, to frighten, страшѹ, стра- пашь.	Молчать, to be silent, молчѹ, молчишь. Стучать, to knock, стучѹ, стучишь.
Вощить, to wax, вошѹ, вощишь.	Пышать, to burn, пышѹ, пышишь.
Лощить, to gloss, лошѹ, лощишь.	Дышать, to breathe, дышѹ, дышишь.
Служить, to serve, служѹ, служишь.	Пищать, to pipe, пишѹ, пишишь.
Лечить, to cure, лечѹ, лечишь.	Трещать, to burst, трещѹ, трещишь.
Учить, to teach, учѹ, учишь.	Кашить, to swarm, кашѹ, кашишь.

According to the 14th paradigm (*мѣдѣть*) are conjugated verbs in *дѣть* and *зѣть*, as well as the non-inchoatives in *дѣть* (with the exception of *гудѣть*, *дудѣть*, *мерзѣть*, *тузѣть* and some others, which belong to the first branch of this second conjugation); these verbs change *д* and *з* into *ж* in the first person of the present. Some verbs in *дѣть* have retained the Slavonian change of *д* into *жд* in the first person of the present. Such are:

Вредѣть, to hurt, <i>pres. врежѹ</i> , вре- дѣшь.	Узѣть, to narrow, <i>pres. ужѹ</i> , ѹзѣшь.
Гладѣть, to even, глажѹ, гладишь.	Морозѣть, to freeze, морожѹ, моро- зѣшь.
Щадѣть, to spare, щадѹ, щадишь.	Возѣть, to carry, вожѹ, возѣшь.
Родѣть, to bring forth, рождѹ, родишь.	Вѣдѣть, to see, вѣжѹ, ( <i>impr.</i> вѣдъ and вѣждъ).
Лудѣть, to tin, лужѹ, лудишь.	Глядѣть, to look, гляжѹ, глядишь.
Нудѣть, to compel, нужѹ, нудишь.	Сидѣть, to sit, сѣжѹ, сидишь.
Будѣть, to waken, бужѹ, будишь.	Смердѣть, to stink, смержѹ, смер- дѣшь.
Водѣть, to lead, вожѹ, водишь.	Убѣдѣть, to persuade, <i>ful.</i> убѣждѹ, убѣдишь.
Сердѣть, to anger, сержѹ, сердѣшь.	Наградѣть, to reward, награждѹ, наградишь.
Судѣть, to judge, сужѹ, судишь.	Возбудѣть, to excite, возбуждѹ, возбудѣшь.
Ходѣть, to go, хожѹ, ходишь.	[упредѣшь.
Грузѣть, to lade, грузжѹ, грузѣшь.	Упредѣть, to prevent, упреждѹ,
Близѣть, to approach, ближѹ, бли- зѣшь.	
Грозѣть, to menace, грожѹ, грозѣшь.	
Низѣть, to lower, нѣжѹ, нѣзѣшь.	

According to the 15th paradigm (вяза́ть) are conjugated some verbs in *вяза́ть*, *вяза́ть* and *вяза́ть*, which change *з*, *з* and *д* into *ж* for all the persons of the present, as well as for the inflections formed from this tense. These are:

Мяза́ть, to appoint, <i>pres.</i> ма́жу, ма́жешь.	Глода́ть, to gnaw, <i>pres.</i> гло́жу, гло́дешь.
Рвяза́ть, to cut, рвяза́ю, рвяза́ешь.	And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st br. of 1st. conjug.
Казы́ть, to show, ка́жу, ка́жешь.	Двига́ть, to move, дви́жу and дви́гаю.
Казы́ться, to seem, ка́жусь, ка́жешься.	Тяга́ться, to be at law, тя́жусь and тя́гаюсь.
Нвяза́ть, to thread, ни́жу, ни́жешь.	Струга́ть, to plane, стру́жу and строгáю (instead of <i>емру́гаю</i> ).
Лвяза́ть, to lick, ли́жу, ли́жешь.	
Брызга́ть, to splash, брызга́ю, брызга́ешь.	

According to the 16th paradigm (плати́ть) are conjugated verbs in *плати́ть*, as well as the non-inchoatives in *плати́ть* (with the exception of some verbs in *плати́ть* which belong to the 20th paradigm), which change *п* into *ч* in the first person of the present. Such are:

Вина́ть, to screw, <i>pres.</i> винчу́, вина́ешь.	Ката́ть, to roll, <i>pres.</i> качу́, ката́ешь.
Золоти́ть, to gild, золо́чу, золо́тишь.	Моло́тишь, to thrash, моло́чу, моло́тишь.
Заботи́ть, to busy, забочу́, забо́тишь.	Свети́ть, to light, свечу́, свети́шь.
Порти́ть, to spoil, порчу́, порти́шь.	Шути́ть, to joke, шучу́, шути́шь.
Мути́ть, to muddy, мучу́, мути́шь.	Коло́тишь, to knock, коло́чу, коло́тишь.
Крути́ть, to twist, кручу́, крути́шь.	Верти́ть, to turn, верчу́, верти́шь.
Мети́ть, to aim, метчу́, мети́шь.	Лети́ть, to fly, летчу́, лети́шь.
Трати́ть, to spend, трачу́, тра́тишь.	Пыхте́ть, to puff, пыхчу́, пыхти́шь.

According to the 17th paradigm (плати́ть) are conjugated several verbs in *плати́ть* and *плати́ть*, which change *п* and *к* into *ч* for all the persons of the present, and for the inflections formed from this tense. Such are.

Прита́ть, to hide, <i>pres.</i> прита́чу, прита́чешь [бормоче́шь].	Куда́хтать, to cackle, <i>pres.</i> куда́хчу, куда́хчешь.
Бормота́ть, to murmur, бормочу́, бормочешь.	Клика́ть, to call, кли́чу, кли́чешь.
Лепета́ть, to chatter, лепечу́, лепече́шь.	Скака́ть, to leap, скачу́, ска́чешь.
Топта́ть, to tread town, топчу́, топче́шь.	Ты́кать, to thrust, ты́чу, ты́чешь.
Хлопота́ть, to bustle, хлопочу́, хлопоче́шь.	And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.
Хохота́ть, to laugh aloud, хохочу́, хохоче́шь.	Алка́ть, to long, алчу́ and алка́ю.
Шепта́ть, to whisper, шепчу́, шепче́шь.	Ика́ть, to hiccup, ичу́ and ика́ю.
Щекота́ть, to tickle, щечочу́, щече́шь.	Хны́кать, to sob, хны́чу and хны́каю.
	Мета́ть, to cast, метчу́ and метáю.

According to the 18th paradigm (проси́ть) are conjugated verbs in *си́ть* (with the exception of *кудѣ́сить* and *чудѣ́сить* which belong to the first branch of the II d conjugation), and also one non-inchoative in *сти́ть*, which change *с* into *ш* in the first person of the present. Such are:

Ва́ксить, to black, <i>pres.</i> ва́кшу, ва́кшишь.	Тру́сить, to be afraid, <i>pres.</i> тру́шу, тру́сишь.
Вѣ́сить, to weigh, вѣ́шу, вѣ́сишь.	Роси́ть, to bedew, роси́у, роси́шь.
Ква́сить, to leaven, ква́шу, ква́сишь.	Гаси́ть, to put out, гаси́у, гаси́шь.
Кра́сить, to colour, кра́шу, кра́сишь.	Мѣ́сить, to knead, мѣ́шу, мѣ́сишь.
Коси́ть, to mow, коси́у, коси́шь.	Носи́ть, to bear, носи́у, носи́шь.
Бѣ́сить, to madden, бѣ́шу, бѣ́сишь.	Виси́ть, to hang, виси́у, виси́шь.

According to the 19th paradigm (писа́ть) are conjugated some verbs in *са́ть* and *ха́ть*, which change *с* and *х* into *ш* for all the persons of the present, as well as for the inflections formed of this tense. These are:

Пляса́ть, to dance, <i>pres.</i> пля́шу, пля́шешь.	And thus the two following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.
По́исать, to gird, по́йшу, по́йшешь.	Колыха́ть, to swing, <i>pres.</i> колы́шу and колы́хаю.
Теса́ть, to hew, тешу́, тѣшешь.	Маха́ть, to fan, машу́, машешь and маха́ю.
Чеса́ть, to comb, чешу́, чѣшешь.	
Бреха́ть, to yell, брешу́, бре́шешь.	
Паха́ть, to plough, па́шу, па́шешь.	

According to the 20th paradigm (чи́стить) are conjugated verbs in *сти́ть* and the non-inchoatives in *сти́нь*, which change *ст* into *ш* in the first person of the present. Some verbs in *ми́ть*, which have retained the Slavonian change of *ш* into *щ*, belong also to this paradigm. Such are:

Грусти́ть, to grieve, <i>pres.</i> гру́щу, грусти́шь.	Прети́ть, to forbid, <i>pres.</i> прещу́, прети́шь.
Гости́ть, to visit, гости́у, гости́шь.	Свя́титъ, to sanctify, свящю́, свя́тишь.
Крести́ть, to christen, крещу́, крѣсти́шь.	Сы́титъ, to satiate, сыщю́, сы́тишь.
Мости́ть, to floor, мостю́, мости́шь.	Хи́титъ, to ravish, хищю́, хи́тишь.
Чести́ть, to treat, чешу́, чѣсти́шь.	Посѣ́титъ, to visit, <i>fut.</i> посѣщю́, посѣ́тишь.
Блестѣ́ть, to shine, блещу́, блестя́шь.	Укро́титъ, to appease, укро́щу, кро́тишь.
Свистѣ́ть, to whistle, сви́щу, свистѣ́шь.	Сократи́ть, to shorten, сокращю́, сокра́тишь.
Хрусти́ть, to crunch, хру́щу, -сти́шь.	Просвѣ́титъ, to enlighten, просвѣщю́, просвѣ́тишь.
Прости́ть, to pardon, <i>fut.</i> про́щу, про́стишь.	Возврати́ть, to return, возвращю́, возвра́тишь.
Пусти́ть, to let go, <i>fut.</i> пу́щу, пу́стишь.	
Богати́ть, to enrich, <i>pres.</i> богащю́, бога́тишь.	

The verbs *простить*, *пустить*, *послать* and following, are the perfect aspects of *прощать*, *пускать*, *посылать*, *укрощать*, *сокращать*, *просвещать*, *возвращать*; thus the inflections *прощу*, *пущу*, *посыщу*, *укрощу*, &c., are future tenses.

According to the 21st paradigm (*искать*) are conjugated some verbs in *скать* and *стать*, as well as four verbs in *тать*, which change *ск* and *ст*, or *т*, into *щ* for all the persons of the present, and for the inflections formed of this tense. These are:

Плескать, to splash, <i>pres.</i> плещу́, плеще́шь.	Скрежетать, to gnash, <i>pres.</i> скрежещу́, скрежеще́шь.
Рыскать, to run, <i>pres.</i> рыщу́, рыще́шь.	Трепетать, to tremble, <i>pres.</i> трепещу́, трепеще́шь.
Полоскать, to rinse, <i>pres.</i> полощущу́, полоще́шь.	
Свистать, to whistle, <i>pres.</i> свисту́, свисте́шь.	And thus the two following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.
Хлестать, to lash, <i>pres.</i> хлещу́, хлеще́шь.	Блистать, shine, <i>pres.</i> блищу́, блище́шь and блистаю́.
Хвостать, to brush, <i>pres.</i> хвощу́, хвоще́шь.	
Клеветать, to slander, <i>pres.</i> клевету́, клевете́шь.	Прыскать, to sprinkle, <i>pres.</i> прыщу́, прыскаю́.
Роптать, to murmur, <i>pres.</i> ропщу́, ропще́шь.	

Third conjugation.

According to the 22d paradigm (*тянуть*) are conjugated verbs in *нуть*, as well as four verbs in *ать* and one in *нть*, which have in the present *у*, observing that some of these verbs, accented on the last syllable in the first person of the present, transfer the accent to the penultima in the second and other persons of the present. The perfect aspect of unity belongs also to this paradigm, but the form *ну* of these verbs is a future tense. Such are:

Тонуть, to sink, <i>pres.</i> тону́, то́нень.	Кинуть, to cast, <i>fut.</i> кину́, кине́шь.
Ракну́ться, to be crazed, <i>pres.</i> рахну́сь, рахне́шься.	Верну́ть, to turn, <i>pres.</i> верну́, верне́шь.
Жаждать, to desire, <i>pres.</i> жажду́, жажде́шь.	Свистну́ть, to whistle, <i>pres.</i> свистну́, свистне́шь.
Ора́ть, to cry, <i>pres.</i> ору́, оре́шь.	Гряну́ть, to thunder, <i>pres.</i> гряну́, гряне́шь.
Соса́ть, to suck, <i>pres.</i> сосу́, сосе́шь.	Гляну́ть, to look, <i>pres.</i> гляну́, гляне́шь.
Стона́ть, to groan, <i>pres.</i> стону́, сто́нень.	Двину́ть, to move, <i>pres.</i> двину́, двине́шь.
Реве́ть, to roar, <i>pres.</i> реву́, реве́шь.	Обману́ть, to cheat, <i>pres.</i> обману́, обмане́шь.

The verb *стона́ть* belongs also to the first branch of the 1st conjugation, having in the present: *стону́*, *сто́нень*, and *стона́ю*, *стона́ешь*, &c. The verb *ора́ть*, in the sense of *plough*, belongs to the first branch of the IIId conjugation.

According to the 23d and 24th paradigms (сѡхнѹть and вѣнѹть) are conjugated the inchoative verbs in *нѹть*, which in the preterit syncopate the termination *нѹ.лѡ* in *ѡ* if this termination is preceded by a consonant, and in *лѡ* if it is preceded by a vowel (neut. *лѡ*, fem. *лѡ*). Such are:

Блѣкнѹть, to fade, <i>pret.</i> блѣкѹ, клѡ, клѡ.	Пѡхнѹть, to smell, <i>pret.</i> пѡхѹ, хлѡ, хлѡ.
Зѡбнѹть, to freeze, зѡбѹ, блѡ, блѡ.	Мѡкнѹть, to grow wet, мѡкѹ, клѡ, клѡ.
Кѣснѹть, to turn sour, кѣсѹ, слѡ, слѡ.	Вѣзнѹть, to sink in, вѣзнѹ, злѡ, злѡ.
Мѣрзнѹть, to freeze, мѣрзнѹ, злѡ, злѡ.	Гѡснѹть, to go out, гѡсѹ, слѡ, слѡ.
Гѣбнѹть, to perish, гѣбѹ, блѡ, блѡ.	Тѣхнѹть, to grow still, тѣхѹ, хлѡ, хлѡ.
Дѡхнѹть, to die, дѡхѹ, хлѡ, хлѡ.	Стѣхнѹть, to cool, стѣхѹ, лѡ, лѡ.

And also the prepositional verb *ушибѣѹть*, to *contuse* (and with other prepositions, perfect aspect of *ушибѡтъ*), which has in the future *ушибѹ*, *ушибѣшь*, and in the preterit *ушибѹ*, *ушиблѡ*, *ушиблѡ*, &c.

According to the 25th paradigm (*мерѣть*) are conjugated verbs in *ерѣть*, which have in the present *пру*, and which syncopate also the preterit, observing that *мерѣть* and *перѣть* transfer in the feminine gender of the preterit the accent to the last syllable. These are:

Мѣрѣть, to die, *pres.* мру, мрѣшь; *pret.* мѣрѹ, мерлѡ, рлѡ; рлѡ.

Перѣть, to press, — прѹ, прѣшь; — перѹ, перлѡ, рлѡ; рлѡ.

And also the verb *стерѣть*, *pres.* стру, стрѣшь; *pret.* стѣрѹ, рлѡ, рлѡ, which now is used only with a preposition, as: *простѣрѣть*, *распростѣрѣть*, to *extend*.

58.—The irregular verbs of the Russian language are divided into three classes: 1) the monosyllabic verbs in *мѡ* preceded by a vowel; 2) some disyllabic verbs in *мѡ*, which in some inflections do not follow the general rules of the conjugation, and 3) the verbs with an irregular termination (in *змѡ*, *смѡ*, *чѡ*, *мѡ* and *шѡ*), as is seen in the following table. Irregular verbs.

Among the monosyllabic verbs there are some which are regular and conjugated according to the paradigms of conjugations. These are:

(See page 142.)

## CONJUGATION OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

I. INFINITIVE.		II. INDICATIVE.		III. IMPERATIVE.		Passive participle.
1. Imperfect (or perfect) aspect.	2. Iterative aspect.	I: PRESENT (or FUTURE). Singular.	2. PRETERIT. Singular.	2d pers. Sing.	Plur.	
Брить, to shave . . .	брѣть	брѣю, брѣ	брѣлъ, бѣла, 40; 41.	бръй, ѣте .		брѣмый.
Дуть, to blow . . .	дуть	дую, ду	дулъ, дѣла, 41а.	дувь, ѣте .		дуемый.
Умѣ (обуть), to put shoes .	умѣть	умѣю, умѣ	умѣлъ, 41а.	умѣй, ѣте .		умѣемый.
Пѣть, to sing . . .	пѣть	пою, по	пою, 41а.	пою, ѣте .		поемый.
Вѣть, to howl . . .	—	вѣю, вѣ	вѣлъ, 41а.	вѣй, ѣте .		—
Крыть, to cover . . .	крыть	крыю, кры	крылъ, 41а, 40; 41.	крый, ѣте .		крытый.
Мыть, to wash . . .	мыть	мою, мо	моу, 41а.	мой, ѣте .		моемый.
Ныть, to grieve . . .	ныть	ною, но	ноу, 41а.	ноу, ѣте .		—
Рыть, to dig . . .	рыть	рою, рѣ	роу, 41а.	рой, ѣте .		рытый.
Гнить, to putrefy . . .	гнить	гну, гни	гнулъ, 41а.	гний, ѣте .		—
Вить, to beat . . .	бить	бью, бѣ	бью, 41а.	бей, ѣте .		битый.
Шить, to sew . . .	шить	шью, шѣ	шью, 41а.	шей, ѣте .		шитый.
Вить, to twine . . .	вить	вю, вѣ	вѣлъ, 41а, 40; 41.	вей, ѣте .		витый.
Лить, to pour . . .	лить	лью, ль	лью, 41а.	лей, ѣте .		литый.
Пить, to drink . . .	пить	пью, пѣ	пью, 41а.	пей, ѣте .		питый.
Цѣля (поить), to repose . .	—	цѣю, цѣ	цѣлъ, 41а.	цѣй, ѣте .		—
Жить, to live . . .	жить	живу, жив	живѣлъ, 41а.	живѣй, ѣте .		(род) живый.
Плывать, to navigate . . .	плыть	плыву, плыв	плывѣлъ, 41а, 40; 41.	плывѣй, ѣте .		—
Самѣть, to be reputed . . .	самѣть	самѣю, самѣ	самѣлъ, 41а.	самѣй, ѣте .		—
Сыть, to grow cold . . .	стыть	стыю, сты	стылъ, 41а, 40; 41.	стынь, ѣте .		—
Здѣть, to build . . .	зидѣть	зидѣю, зидѣ	зидѣлъ, 41а.	зидѣй, ѣте .		зидый.
Ять (звать), to take . . .	—	яю, я	зидѣлъ, 41а, 40; 41.	зидѣй, ѣте .		зидый.

## I. MONOSYLLABIC VERBS.









Знать, to know, I. 1, <i>pres.</i> знаю, знаешь.	Тмать, to darken, II. 1, <i>pres.</i> тмю.
Пхать, to push, — пхāju.	Бдѣть, to wake, — бдю.
Чкать, to clash, — чкāju.	Зрѣть, to see, — зрю.
Грѣть, to warm, I. 4, <i>pres.</i> грѣю.	Мжѣть, to twinkle, II. 3, <i>pres.</i> мжу, мжѣшь.
Зрѣть, to ripen, — зрѣю.	Мшиѣть, to cover with moss, — мшию.
Млѣть, to be stupified, — млѣю.	Тщѣться, to endeavour, — тщусь.
Прѣть, to stew, — прѣю.	Мчать, to hurry, — мчу.
Рдѣть, to redden, — рдѣю.	Изѣть (пронзѣть), to pierce, II. 4, <i>pres.</i> -нжу, нзѣшь.
Смѣть, to dare, — смѣю.	Лѣстѣть, to flatter, II. 7, <i>pres.</i> лѣщу, лѣстѣшь.
Спѣть, to ripen, — спѣю.	Мстѣть, to avenge, — мщу, мстѣшь.
Тлѣть, to rot, — тлѣю.	Гнѣть, to bend, III. 1, <i>pres.</i> гну, гнѣшь.
Длѣть, to prolong, II. 1, <i>pres.</i> длю.	Льзѣть, to stick, — льзю.
Дмѣть, to swell, — дмю.	Мзгнѣть, to turn sour, — мзгну.
Злѣть, to irritate, — злю.	Мжнѣть, to shut, — мкну.
Мнѣть, to think, — мню.	Снѣть, to fall asleep, — сну.
Снѣться, to dream, <i>impers.</i> снѣтся.	
Тлѣть, to corrupt, — тлю, тлѣшь.	

The preceding table of irregular verbs gives also the *iterative aspect* and the *passive participle*, inflections which in these verbs do not follow always the general rules of the formation.

Delineation  
of verbs.

59.—The property of the Russian verbs to have more or less aspects, is named their *delineation* (начертаніе), and depends as well upon their exterior form as upon their meaning. With this relation the verbs, as is above mentioned (§ 50), are *simple* (простые) or *prepositional* (предложные).

1. The *simple* verbs, which are without a preposition, can be *complete* (полные), *double* (сугубые), *incomplete* (неполные) and *defective* (недостаточные). The *complete* simple verbs are those which designate a physical action of men or animals, as кидать, to throw; плевать, to spit. The *double* simple verbs are those which express the movement of an acting object, as идти and ходить, to go; нести and носить, to bring. The *incomplete* and *defective* simple verbs are those which are not included in

the two preceding subdivisions, as *дѣлать*, *to make*; *имѣть*, *to have*.

2. The *prepositional* verbs, which are formed with any preposition, are subdivided, relatively to their delineation, according as they are derivated from the incomplete, defective, complete or double simple verbs.—In general the delineation of the Russian verbs, as well simple as prepositional, is seen in the following table.

# DELINEATION OF VERBS.

I. SIMPLE VERBS.	II. PREPOSITIONAL VERBS.
1. The <i>incomplete</i> simple verbs have 2 aspects:	1. Formed from the <i>incomplete</i> simple verbs, the prepositional verbs have 2 aspects:
<div>1) <i>imperfect.</i>                      2) <i>iterative.</i></div> <div>дѣлать.                      дѣлывать.</div>	<div>1) <i>imperfect.</i>                      2) <i>perfect of duration.</i></div> <div>обдѣлывать.                      обдѣлать.</div>
3. The <i>defective</i> simple verbs have only the <i>imperfect</i> aspect.	2. Formed from the <i>defective</i> simple verbs, they have only the aspect <i>perfect of duration</i> .
имѣть.	возымѣть.
3. The <i>complete</i> simple verbs have the 3 aspects:	3. Formed from the <i>complete</i> simple verbs, they have the 3 aspects:
<div>1) <i>imperfect.</i>                      2) <i>iterative.</i>                      3) <i>perf. of unity.</i></div> <div>кидать.                      кидывать.                      кинуть.</div>	<div>1) <i>imperfect.</i>                      2) <i>perf. of durat.</i>                      3) <i>perf. of unity.</i></div> <div>закидывать.                      закидывать.                      закинуть.</div>
4. The <i>double</i> simple verbs are two verbs which have together 3 aspects:	4. Formed from the <i>double</i> simple verbs, there are two various verbs, each with 2 aspects:
1) <i>definite imp.</i> 2) <i>indefn. imp.</i> 3) <i>iterative.</i>	a) from the <i>definite</i> b) from the <i>indefinite</i> verb.
<div>нести.                      носить.                      нашивать.</div>	<div>1) <i>imperf.</i>                      2) <i>perfect.</i>                      1) <i>imperf.</i>                      2) <i>perfect.</i></div> <div>выносить.                      вынести.                      вынашивать.                      выносить.</div>

60.—The *incomplete* simple verbs are those which do not designate a physical action properly so called, neither a movement of a place to another. These verbs have two aspects: 1) the *imperfect* aspect, and 2) the *iterative* aspect. The first, which is the radical form of the verb, ends in *мь*, *шь*, *ми* or *уи*, and the latter in *ываю*, *иваю*, *ваю* or

Simple  
verbs.

*amb*, and is formed from the imperfect aspect, as is seen in the following examples.

In the formation of the iterative aspect the tonic accent is placed on the termination *samb* and *amb*, whilst in *ивать* and *ивамь* it is placed on the antepenultima, and if in this syllable is an *o*, this vowel is changed into *û*. We must yet observe that the iterative aspect is seldom used in the infinitive, and it has in general only the preterit tense; e. g. не пива́ть тебѣ вина́, *you ought not to drink wine*; онъ пѣзю́алъ верхо́мъ, *he rid often*; but this inflection is necessary to form the prepositional verbs. The table of irregular verbs, above shown (§ 58), gives also the iterative aspect, which in these verbs presents some irregularities.

1) Imperfect aspect.	2) Iterative asp.
Гадать, to guess, I. 1. . . . .	гады́вать.
Думать, to think, — . . . . .	ду́мывать.
Дѣлать, to make, — . . . . .	дѣ́ловать.
Играть, to play, — . . . . .	игры́вать.
Кутать, to wrap, — . . . . .	ку́тывать.
Мотать, to wind, — . . . . .	ма́тывать.
Работать, to work, — . . . . .	раба́тывать.
Щупать, to sound, — . . . . .	щупы́вать.
Знать, to know, — . . . . .	знава́ть.
Ковать, to forge, I. 2. . . . .	ко́вывать.
Рисовать, to draw, — . . . . .	рисо́вывать.
Советовать, to counsel, — . . . . .	совѣ́тывать.
Воевать, to war, — . . . . .	воё́вывать.
Дневать, to pass the day, — . . . . .	днё́вывать.
Ночевать, to pass the night, — . . . . .	ночё́вывать.
Гулять, to take a walk, I. 3. . . . .	гу́лывать.
Равнять, to equal, — . . . . .	равни́вать.
Смѣяться, to laugh, — . . . . .	сме́иваться.
Вѣять, to blow, — . . . . .	вѣва́ть.
Сѣять, to sow, — . . . . .	сѣва́ть.
Слабѣть, to grow weak, I. 4. . . . .	слабѣ́вать.
Грѣть, to warm, — . . . . .	грѣва́ть.
Говѣть, to keep fast, — . . . . .	гавни́вать.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative asp.*

Брани́ть, to scold, II, 1. . . . .	бра́нивать.
Пали́ть, to fire, — . . . . .	пали́вать.
Моли́ть, to pray, — . . . . .	мали́вать.
Спори́ть, to contend, — . . . . .	спари́вать.
Дари́ть, to give, — . . . . .	дари́вать.
Дрази́ть, to provoke, — . . . . .	дра́жнить.
Боле́ть, to ache, — . . . . .	ба́ливать.
Смотре́ть, to look, — . . . . .	сма́тривать.
Горѣ́ть, to burn, — . . . . .	гара́ть.
Веле́ть, to order, — . . . . .	веле́вывать.
Зре́ть, to see, — . . . . .	зп्रा́ть.
Пои́ть, to give to drink, . . . . .	паи́вать.
Клеи́ть, to glue, — . . . . .	клеи́вать.
Боя́ться, to fear, — . . . . .	баи́ваться.
Поро́ть, to rip, — . . . . .	па́рывать.
Моло́ть, to grind, — . . . . .	мали́вать.
Люби́ть, to love, II. 2. . . . .	лю́блять.
Лови́ть, to catch, — . . . . .	лави́вать.
Руби́ть, to hew, — . . . . .	руба́ть.
Корми́ть, to nourish, — . . . . .	карми́вать.
То́пить, to heat, — . . . . .	та́пливать.
Терпе́ть, to suffer, — . . . . .	те́рпиво́вать.
Кипѣ́ть, to boil, — . . . . .	кнпа́ть.
Дрема́ть, to slumber, — . . . . .	дре́мливать.
Сыпа́ть, to strew, — . . . . .	сыпа́ть.
Хрома́ть, to be lame, — . . . . .	хра́мывать.
Лечи́ть, to cure, II. 3. . . . .	ле́чить.
Служи́ть, to serve, — . . . . .	слу́живать.
Туши́ть, to put out, — . . . . .	ту́шить.
Морщи́ть, to wrinkle, — . . . . .	ма́рщить.
Держа́ть, to keep, — . . . . .	де́рживать.
Молча́ть, to be silent, — . . . . .	малчи́вать.
Дыша́ть, to breathe, — . . . . .	дыха́ть.
Глади́ть, to even, II. 4. . . . .	гла́живать.
Городи́ть, to enclose, — . . . . .	гора́живать.
Суди́ть, to judge, — . . . . .	су́живать.
Грузи́ть, to lade, — . . . . .	гру́живать.

1) Imperfect aspect.	2) Iterative asp.
Сидѣть, to sit, II. 4. . . . .	сѣживать.
Вязать, to tie, — . . . . .	вязывать.
Платить, to pay, II. 5. . . . .	плачивать.
Колотить, to knock, — . . . . .	колачивать.
Молотить, to thrash, — . . . . .	молачивать.
Плакать, to weep, — . . . . .	плакивать.
Вѣсить, to weigh, II. 6. . . . .	вѣшивать.
Просить, to ask, — . . . . .	прашивать.
Гасить, to extinguish, — . . . . .	гашивать.
Писать, to write, — . . . . .	пи́сывать.
Плясать, to dance, — . . . . .	плясывать.
Пахать, to plough, — . . . . .	пахивать.
Гостить, to visit, II. 7. . . . .	гашивать.
Мостить, to floor, — . . . . .	мощивать.
Снастить, to rig, — . . . . .	сна́чивать.
Искать, to seek, — . . . . .	и́скивать.
Топнуть, to sink, III. 1. . . . .	топáть.
Тянуть, to draw, — . . . . .	тя́гивать.
Вянуть, to fade, — . . . . .	вяда́ть.
Сохнуть, to dry, — . . . . .	сыха́ть.
Пахнуть, to smell, — . . . . .	пахивать.
Гнуть, to bend, — . . . . .	гну́бать.
Мкнуть, to shut, — . . . . .	мы́кать.
Сосать, to suck, — . . . . .	са́сывать.
Переть, to press, III. 2. . . . .	пира́ть.
Тереть, to rub, — . . . . .	тира́ть.

61.—The *defective* simple verbs are those which have only the *indefinite imperfect* aspect, such are the following verbs:

Адѣть, to grow ruby. I. 4.	Желать, to wish, I. 1.
Бѣдствовать, to be in misery, I. 2.	Имѣть, to have, I. 4.
Винить, to accuse, II. 1.	Карать, to punish, I. 1.
Владѣть, to govern, I. 4.	Лестить, to flatter, II. 7.
Вредить, to hurt, II. 4.	Мечтать, to imagine, I. 1.
Гордиться, to be proud, II. 4.	Мирить, to pacify, II. 1.
Жалеть, to have pity, I. 4.	Мудрить, to subtilize, II. 1.

Мягчить, to mollify, II. 3.	Творить, to create, II. 1.
Побдничать, to lunch, I. 1.	Терять, to lose, I. 3.
Радѣть, to take care, I. 4.	Торопить, to hurry, II. 2.
Растить, to let grow, II. 7.	Умничать, to refine, I. 1. *
Роптать, to murmur, II. 7.	Умѣть, to know, I. 4.
Рыдать, to sob, I. 1.	Хитрить, to be artful, II. 1.
Святить, to sanctify, II. 7.	Хранить, to preserve, II. 1.
Спѣшить, to hasten, II. 3.	Хотѣть, to will, <i>irr.</i>
Стараться, to endeavour, I. 1.	Щадить, to spare, II. 4.

The defective verbs differ from the incomplete verbs in as much as they have not the iterative aspect, which in general is used only in verbs designating an ordinary, non intellectual action, and it is not found in poetry neither in an elevated style.

62.—The *complete* simple verbs are those which designate ordinarily a physical action of men or animals, or, speaking more correctly, a visible or audible action. These verbs have the three aspects: 1) the *imperfect*, 2) the *iterative*, and 3) the *perfect of unity*. The two first aspects have all the properties of those of incomplete verbs; but the perfect aspect of unity ends in *нѣтъ*, and is formed putting this termination in the place of that of the imperfect aspect, sometimes with a little change of the vowel, and sometimes with the elision of the preceding consonant, as is seen in the following examples.

1) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Iterative aspect.</i>	3) <i>Perf. asp. of unity.</i>
А'хать, to sigh, I. 1. . .	ахивать. . . . .	ахнѣть, III. 1.
Блѣстѣть, to shine, — . . . . .	— . . . . .	блѣснѣть, —
Болтать, to shake, — . . . . .	балтывать. . . . .	болтнѣть, —
Глотать, to swallow, — . . . . .	глѣть. . . . .	глонѣть, —
Двѣгать, to move, I. 1. and II. 4. . . . .	двѣгивать and двѣгать. . . . .	двѣнѣть, —
Дерзѣть, to dare, I. 1. . . . .	— . . . . .	дерзнѣть, —

1) *Imperfect aspect.*      2) *Iterative aspect.*      3) *Perf. asp. of unity.*

Зѣвѣть, to yawn, I. 1.	зѣвывать . . . . .	зѣвнѣть, III, 1.
Кѣсѣться, to touch, —	— . . . . .	коснѣться, —
Квѣкать, to quack, —	квѣкивать . . . . .	квѣкнѣть, —
Кивѣть, to give a nod, —	— . . . . .	кивнѣть, —
Кидѣть, to cast, —	кидывать . . . . .	киднѣть, —
Лѣпать, to burst, —	лѣпывать . . . . .	лѣпнѣть, —
Нюхѣть, to smell, —	нюхивать . . . . .	нюхнѣть, —
Порхѣть, to flutter, —	пѣрхивать . . . . .	пѣрхнѣть, —
Прыгѣть, to jump, —	прыгивать . . . . .	прыгнѣть, —
Прѣдать, to bound, —	прѣдывать . . . . .	прѣднѣть, —
Сверкѣть, to flash, —	сверкивать . . . . .	сверкнѣть, —
Толкѣть, to push, —	толкивать . . . . .	толкнѣть, —
Трогѣть, to touch, —	трогивать . . . . .	трѣгнѣть, —
Хѣркать, to spit, —	хѣркивать . . . . .	хѣркнѣть, —
Хлѣпать, to clap, —	хлѣпывать . . . . .	хлѣпнѣть, —
Совѣть, to shove, I. 2.	совывать . . . . .	сѣвнѣть, —
Клевѣть, to peck, —	клеывать . . . . .	клѣвнѣть, —
Плевѣть, to spit, —	плѣвывать . . . . .	плѣвнѣть, —
Жевѣть, to chew, —	жѣвывать . . . . .	жевнѣть, —
Кашлять, to cough, I. 3.	кашливать . . . . .	кашлянѣть, —
Нырѣть, to dive, —	ныривать . . . . .	нырнѣть, —
Стрѣлять, to shoot, —	стрѣливать . . . . .	стрѣльнѣть, —
Швырѣть, to sling, —	швыривать . . . . .	швырнѣть, —
Рѣять, to throw, —	— . . . . .	рѣнѣть, —
Скользить, to slip, II. 1.	скальзывать . . . . .	скользнѣть, —
Шевелѣть, to stir, —	шевеливать . . . . .	шевелѣнѣть, —
Колѣть, to sting, —	калывать . . . . .	колѣнѣть, —
Давѣть, to press, II. 2.	давливать . . . . .	давнѣть, —
Рубѣть, to hew, —	рубѣть . . . . .	рубнѣть, —
Гремѣть, to thunder, —	— . . . . .	грѣнѣть, —
Храпѣть, to snore, —	храпывать . . . . .	храпнѣть, —
Трепѣть, to brake, —	трѣпливать . . . . .	трѣпнѣть, —
Щипѣть, to pinch, —	щипывать . . . . .	щипнѣть, —
Ворошить, to rummage, II. 3.	ворашивать . . . . .	ворохнѣть, —
Плющѣть, to flatten, —	плющивать . . . . .	плюснѣть, —
Визжѣть, to squeak, —	визгивать . . . . .	визгнѣть, —
Дрожѣть, to tremble, —	драгивать . . . . .	дрогнѣть, —



1) *imperfect aspect.*2) *iterative aspect.*3) *Perf. asp. of unity.*

Крича́ть, to cry, II. 3.	кри́кнать.	кри́кнуть, III. 1.
Пы́жать, to burn, —	пы́живать.	пы́хнуть, —
Тре́щать, to burst, —	тре́скивать.	тре́снуть, —
Гляде́ть, to look, II. 4.	гля́живать.	гля́нуть, —
Брызга́ть, to splash, —	брызгивать.	брызну́ть, —
Лиза́ть, to lick, —	лизывать.	лизну́ть, —
Маза́ть, to anoint, —	ма́зывать.	мазну́ть, —
Верте́ть, to turn, II. 5.	ве́рчивать от ве́рчивать.	верну́ть, —
Скака́ть, to leap, —	ска́кивать.	скокну́ть, —
Клика́ть, to call, —	кли́кать.	кликну́ть, —
Шепта́ть, to whisper, —	ше́птать.	шепну́ть, —
Труси́ть, to sprinkle, II. 6.	—	тру́хнуть, —
Колыха́ть, to swing, —	колы́живать.	колы́хну́ть, —
Маха́ть, to wave, —	ма́хивать.	махну́ть, —
Плеска́ть, to splash, II. 7.	плёскивать.	плесну́ть, —
Прыска́ть, to syringe, —	пры́скивать.	пры́сну́ть, —
Свиста́ть, to whistle, —	сви́стывать.	сви́сну́ть, —
Хлеста́ть, to lash, —	хлё́стывать.	хлесну́ть, —
Грести́, to scrape, <i>irr.</i>	греба́ть.	гребну́ть, —
Ду́ть, to blow, —	дува́ть.	ду́нуть, —
Же́чь, to burn, —	жи́гать.	жигну́ть, —
Рва́ть, to tear, —	рыва́ть.	рвану́ть, —
Стри́чь, to shear, . . .	стрига́ть.	стригну́ть, —
Траси́ть, to shake, —	тряса́ть.	тряхну́ть, —

Some verbs, as *мину́ть, обману́ть, помяну́ть, вы́нуть*, which are perfect aspects of *миновать, to pass; обманывать, to cheat; поминать, to mention; вынимать, to take out*, have the termination of the perfect aspect of unity; but by their meaning they do not designate an action performed only once. In these verbs the letter *н* belongs to the root, and not to the termination.

63.—The *double simple* verbs are those which designate the movement of an acting object, or sometimes a visible or audible action. These verbs have together three aspects: 1) the *definite imperfect*, 2) the *indefinite imperfect*, and 3) the *iterative*

aspect. The definite aspect is the radical form, from which are derived both the others. These are the following verbs:

- 1) *Definite imperfect aspect.*    2) *Indefinite imp. aspect.*    3) *Iterative aspect.*

Блудить, to ramble, II. 4.	блуждать, I. 1.	—
Брести, to wander, <i>irr.</i>	бродить, II. 4.	браживать.
Бѣжать, to run, <i>irr.</i>	бѣгать, I. 1.	бѣживать and бѣгать.
Валить, to throw down, II. 1.	валать, I. 3.	важивать.
Везти, to carry, <i>irr.</i>	возить, II. 4.	важивать.
Вести, to lead, <i>irr.</i>	водить, —	важивать.
Видѣть, to see, II. 4.	видать, I. 1.	видывать.
Гнать, to drive, <i>irr.</i>	гонять, I. 3.	ганживать.
Идти, to go, <i>irr.</i>	ходить, II. 4.	хаживать.
Катить, to roll, II. 5.	качать, I. 1.	качивать.
Кривить, to crook, II. 2.	кривлять, I. 3.	крививать.
Летѣть, to fly, II. 5.	летать, I. 1.	лѣтывать.
Ломить, to break, II. 2.	ломать, —	ламывать.
Лѣзть, to climb, <i>irr.</i>	лазить, II. 4.	лѣзать and лѣживать.
Нести, to bring, <i>irr.</i>	носить, II. 6.	нашивать.
Плыть, to swim, <i>irr.</i>	плавать, I. 1.	плывать.
Ползти, to crawl, <i>irr.</i>	ползать, —	ползать and паизывать.
Ронить, to let fall, II. 1.	ронять, I. 3.	ранживать.
Слышать, to hear, II. 3.	слыхать, I. 1.	слыхивать.
Садить, to seat, II. 4.	сажать, —	саживать.
Ташить, to trail, II. 3.	таскать, —	таскивать.
Ѣхать, to ride, <i>irr.</i>	ѣздить, II. 4.	ѣживать and ѣзжать.

The Russian language has some verbs which, with a double termination, do not designate a movement; such are: блистать and блистѣть, *to shine*; мѣрить and мѣрять, *to measure*; сви-стать and свистѣть, *to whistle*. These verbs do not belong to the class of the double verbs; they are two various forms which have the same meaning, and which do not express the definite or indefinite nature of the action.

Prepositional verbs.

64.—The prepositional verbs are formed from the simple verbs by means of any preposition. The prepositions, when they are joined to a verb, sub-

ject it to sundry changes either in the voice, in the aspect and time, or in the meaning.

1. A neuter verb sometimes takes with the preposition the active meaning, as: спать, *to sleep*, and проспáть, *to pass in sleeping*; быть, *to be*, and забыть, *to forget*; пла́кать, *to weep*, and выпла́кать, *to obtain by weeping*.

2. The influence of a preposition on the time and aspect is more important than that on the voice. A simple verb, taking a preposition, receives a more restricted meaning. Thus, by joining to a preposition, the iterative aspect becomes imperfect, and the imperfect aspect becomes perfect. But this latter remains a perfect aspect even with a preposition, as is seen by the two following examples.

Simple figure.	Prepositional figure.
Двѣнуть, to move, } Бросать, to throw, } <i>perf. asp. of unity.</i>	Вдвѣнуть, to move in, } Набросать, to throw on, } <i>perf. asp. of unity.</i>
двѣгать, } бросать, } <i>imperfect aspect . . . . .</i>	вдвѣгать, } набросать, } <i>perf. asp. of duration.</i>
двѣгать or двѣгивать, } брасывать, . . . . . } <i>iterative asp.</i>	двѣгать or вѣдвѣгивать, } набрасывать, . . . . . } <i>imperfect asp.</i>

3. The acceptation of the verb, independently of the completion of the action, is modified by the meaning of the preposition, as is seen in the two following examples: ходи́ть or иди́ти, *to go*, and имáть or ять, *to take*.

Входи́ть, войти́, to go in.	Нисходи́ть, низойти́, to go down.
Восходи́ть, взойти́, to go up.	Обходи́ть, обойти́, to go round.
Выходи́ть, выйти́, to go out.	Отходи́ть, отойти́, to go away.
Доходи́ть, дойти́, to come to.	Переходи́ть, перейти́, to go over.
Заходи́ть, зайти́, to go behind.	Превосходи́ть, превзойти́, to surpass.
Исходи́ть, изойти́, to go out.	
Находи́ть, найти́, to go upon.	

Походить, to resemble.	Донимать, донять, to get the remainder.
Пойти, to go.	Занимать, занять, to borrow.
Подходить, подойти, to go under.	Изнимать, изнять, to take out.
Предходить, to go before.	Нанимать, нанять, to hire.
Приходить, прийти, to come in.	Обнимать, обнять, to embrace.
Проходить, пройти, to go through.	Отнимать, отнять, to take away.
Присходить, прозойти, to proceed.	Перенимать, перенять, to intercept. [stand.
Расходиться, разойтись, to go asunder.	Понимать, понять, to understand.
Сходить, сойти, to go down.	Поймать, to catch.
Снисходить, снизойти, to condescend.	Поднимать, поднять, to take up.
Уходить, уйти, to go away.	Предпринимать, предпринять, to undertake.
Внимать, внять, to attend to.	Принимать, принять, to accept.
Взимать, to levy.	Приподнимать, приподнять, to raise up.
Взять, to take.	Пронимать, пронять, to put through.
Воздымать, to raise.	Разнимать, разнять, to take asunder.
Воспринимать, воспринять, to receive.	Снимать, снять, to take off.
Вынимать, вынуть, to take out.	Унимать, унять, to repress.

The two preceding examples show that the prepositions which are joined to verbs, are: в (во), вз (взо, воз), вы, до, за, из (изо), на, над (надо), низ (низо), о or об (обо), от (ото), пере or пре, по, под (подо), при, про, раз (разо), с (со), у. We must remark that the prepositions which end in a vowel, never undergo a change, whilst those which end in a consonant, take the vowel *o*, when they have to be united to a verb which begins with two or three consonants, as well as to the verb идти (*s.l. ити*), in which the vowel *u* besides that changes into the semi-vowel (*й*).

The prepositions без (безо), пред (предо), and also с (со) in the meaning of a reciprocal action, modifying the acceptance of a verb, do not communicate to it the meaning of the completion of an action. Joined to one of these prepositions, the verb remains in its imperfect aspect, as: безчестить, to dishonour; предвидеть, to foresee; содѣйствовать, to cooperate.

It is the same with adverbs used sometimes for prepositions, e. g. *противостоять*, to resist; *мимоидти*, to come by.

Care must be taken not to confound the prepositional verbs with the verbs which are derived from nouns formed with a preposition, as: *разумѣть*, to understand, from *разумъ*, intelligence; *помнить*, to remember, from *память*, memory; *совѣститься*, to have a conscience, from *совѣсть*, conscience. These verbs belong to the class of the incomplete simple verbs.

65.—The prepositional verbs, with regard to their delineation, differ among them, according as they are formed from the defective, incomplete, complete or double simple verbs.

1. Those which are derived from a *defective* simple verb, have only the *perfect* aspect, which is purely the imperfect aspect of the simple verb, joined to one of the prepositions above enumerated. Such are:

Пожелать, to wish, I. 1.	Растерять, to lose, I. 3.
Покаратъ, to chastise, —	Возымѣть, to have, I. 4.
Отмечтатъ, to imagine, —	Завладѣть, to possess, —
Воспылатъ, to burst into flames, —	Сумѣть, to know, —
Нарыдаться, to wail, —	Ощениться, to whelp, II. 1.
Постараться, to endeavour, —	Остепениться, to grow sedate, —
Ошельмовать, to treat like a rogue, I. 2.	Возгордиться, to be proud of, II. 4.
Возопи́ть (for <i>взвонѣть</i> ), to cry out, I. 3.	Пощадить, to spare, —
	Затрепетать, to tremble, II. 7.
	Поблѣкнуть, to fade, III. 1.

Some verbs derived from the defective simple verbs, have also the *imperfect* aspect, which is formed from the iterative aspect, not used in the simple verb and taken in its contracted form, as will be seen later (2. б).

The preceding and the following examples show that the *perfect* aspect of a prepositional verb is formed from the im-

perfect aspect of the simple verb, by the mere joining of a preposition, without any change in the termination of the verb. Further, the infinitive and the imperative from imperfect become *perfect* (стараться, *to endeavour*; старайся, *endeavour*, and постараться, *to use all one's endeavours*; постарайся, *use all your endeavours*); the present (старюсь, *I endeavour*) becomes a *perfect future* (постарюсь, *I shall endeavour, I shall use all my endeavours*), and the imperfect preterit (старался, *I endeavoured*) becomes a *perfect preterit* (постарался, *I have used all my endeavours*).

As the prepositions serve generally to form the perfect preterit and future of the defective simple verbs, custom only can show what is the preposition which a verb takes in order to designate the completion of an action. Thus *за* expresses a beginning; *но*, a part; *до*, the finishing; *от*, the discontinuance; *по*, all the time; *с*, *у*, *за*, *но*, the completion and simultaneousness; *всѣ*, *из*, *об*, *при*, *пере*, a totality. Е. г. заговорить, *to begin to speak*; поговорить, *to speak a little*; договорить, *to finish speaking*; отговорить, *to leave off speaking*; проговорить, *to pass the time in speaking*; сдѣлать, *to have made*; украсть, *to have stolen*; засмѣяться, *to have laughed*; покраснѣть, *to have blushed*; выйти, исходить, обходить, *to have gone all over*; прѣсть, *to have eaten all up*; передѣлать, *to have made all*.

2. Derived from the *incomplete* simple verbs, the prepositional verbs have two aspects: 1) the *perfect* aspect, and 2) the *imperfect* aspect, which are formed, the former from the imperfect, and the latter from the iterative aspect of the simple verb, at first without any change in the terminations, at other times with contraction, sometimes even with and without contraction at the same time: occasionally they vary widely from the general rules for the formation of the prepositional verbs. We sometimes find: a quite irregular formation, the want of one of the two aspects perfect or imperfect, the loss or non-existence of the simple verb which has

formed the prepositional verb, and several other irregularities which are mentioned below.

We must remark that in the prepositional verbs the tonic accent remains upon the same syllable as in the simple verb, with exception of the verbs formed with the preposition *бы*, which in the perfect aspect transfer the accent of this preposition. Some monosyllabic verbs, taking a preposition, transfer also, in the preterit of the perfect aspect, the accent to the preposition; as: *умеръ, отперъ, прибылъ, началъ*, &c., from *умерѣть, to die; отперѣть, to open; прибыть, to arrive; начать, to begin*.

a) The perfect and imperfect aspects of the prepositional verb preserve both the terminations of the imperfect and iterative aspects of the simple verb. Such are:

1) Perfect aspect.	2) Imperfect asp.
Уга́даты, to guess, I. 1. . . . .	уга́дываты, I. 1.
Обду́маты, to deliberate, — . . . . .	обду́мываты, —
Отдѣ́ляты, to finish, — . . . . .	отдѣ́лываты, —
Заигр́аты, to play, — . . . . .	заигр́ываты, —
Оку́таты, to wrap about, — . . . . .	оку́тываты, —
Промот́аты, to squander, — . . . . .	промат́ываты, —
Смѣш́аты, to mingle, — . . . . .	смѣш́иваты, —
Узн́аты, to recognise, — . . . . .	узн́аваты, —
Приков́аты, to chain to, I. 2. . . . .	приков́ываты, —
Обрисов́аты, to outline, — . . . . .	обрисов́ываты, —
Основ́аты, to found, — . . . . .	основ́иваты, —
Завоев́аты, to conquer, — . . . . .	завоев́ываты, —
Прогул́аты, to walk, I. 3. . . . .	прогул́иваты, —
Осмѣ́аты, to laugh at, — . . . . .	осмѣ́иваты, —
Усѣ́аты, to sow, — . . . . .	усѣ́иваты, —
Ослаб́аты, to grow weak, I. 4. . . . .	ослаб́иваты, —
Догов́аты, to fast, — . . . . .	догав́иваты, —
Согр́аты, to warm, — . . . . .	согр́иваты, —
Зажа́рить, to roast, II. 1. . . . .	зажа́риваты, —
Усмотр́аты, to discern, — . . . . .	усматр́иваты, —

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Загорѣть, to be sunburnt, II. 1. . . . .	загарать, I. 1. . . . .
Выкроить, to cut out, — . . . . .	выкраивать, — . . . . .
Наклеить, to glue on, — . . . . .	наклеивать, — . . . . .
Выстроить, to build, — . . . . .	выстраивать, — . . . . .
Отстоять, to defend, — . . . . .	отстаивать, — . . . . .
Отпороть, to unrip, — . . . . .	отпарывать, — . . . . .
Окормить, to poison, II. 2. . . . .	окармливать, — . . . . .
Вывловить, to catch all, — . . . . .	вылавливать, — . . . . .
Вытерпеть, to endure, — . . . . .	вытерпывать, — . . . . .
Вскипеть, to boil up, — . . . . .	вскипать, — . . . . .
Вылечить, to heal, II. 3. . . . .	вылечивать, — . . . . .
Упрочить, to secure, — . . . . .	упрочивать, — . . . . .
Заслужить, to deserve, — . . . . .	заслуживать, — . . . . .
Умолчать, to keep secret, — . . . . .	умалчивать, — . . . . .
Слать, to arrange, II. 4. . . . .	слаживать, — . . . . .
Показать, to show, — . . . . .	показывать, — . . . . .
Привязать, to bind, — . . . . .	привязывать, — . . . . .
Заколотить, to knock, II. 5. . . . .	заколачивать, — . . . . .
Вымолотить, to thrash, — . . . . .	вымалачивать, — . . . . .
Выплакать, to weep out, — . . . . .	выплакивать, — . . . . .
Испросить, to ask, II. 6. . . . .	испрашивать, — . . . . .
Подписать, to subscribe, — . . . . .	подписывать, — . . . . .
Вымостить, to pave, II. 7. . . . .	вымощивать, — . . . . .
Взыскать, to exact, — . . . . .	взыскивать, — . . . . .
Утонуть, to drown, III. 1. . . . .	утопать, — . . . . .
Вытянуть, to stretch, — . . . . .	вытягивать, — . . . . .
Увянуть, to wither, — . . . . .	увядать, — . . . . .
Загнуть, to bend, — . . . . .	загибать, — . . . . .
Всосать, to absorb, — . . . . .	всасывать, — . . . . .
Запереть, to shut, III. 2. . . . .	запирать, — . . . . .
Втереть, to rub out, — . . . . .	вытирать, — . . . . .
Умереть, to die, — . . . . .	умирать, — . . . . .
Отобрать, to choose out, <i>irr.</i> . . . .	отбирать, — . . . . .
Прибить, to affix, — . . . . .	прибивать, — . . . . .
Прилить, to pour to, — . . . . .	приливать, — . . . . .
Выпить, to drink out, — . . . . .	выпивать, — . . . . .
Зашить, to sew up, — . . . . .	зашивать, — . . . . .



1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

ВЫМЫТЬ, to wash out, III. 2. . . . .	ВЫМЫВАТЬ, I. 1.
ЗАКРЫТЬ, to cover, — . . . . .	ЗАКРЫВАТЬ, —
УЖИТЬСЯ, to settle, . . . . .	УЖИВАТЬСЯ, —
НАПѢТЬ, to tune, — . . . . .	НАПѢВАТЬ, —
ПРОСПАТЬ, to sleep away, — . . . .	ПРОСЫПАТЬ, —
ЗАПЕЧЬ, to bake, — . . . . .	ЗАПЕКАТЬ, —
ИЗСѢЧЬ, to cut out, — . . . . .	ИЗСѢКАТЬ, —
СЪЕЗТЬ, to eat up, — . . . . .	СЪЕДАТЬ, —
ВПЛЕСТЬ, to plait in, — . . . . .	ВПЛЕТАТЬ, —

b) In the verbs in *umb* of the II<sup>d</sup> conjugation, the termination of the iterative aspect is often contracted into *яmb*, or into *амь* after a hissing consonant; this happens especially when the simple verb belongs to the class of the defective verbs, that is when the iterative aspect is varying. In this case the tonic accent is placed on the termination. Such are the following verbs:

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

ОБВИНИТЬ, to accuse, II. 1. . . . .	ОБВИНЯТЬ, I. 3.
УТОЛИТЬ, to appease, — . . . . .	УТОЛЯТЬ, —
ПРИМИРИТЬ, to reconcile, — . . . .	ПРИМИРАТЬ, —
СОТВОРИТЬ, to create, — . . . . .	СОТВОРАТЬ, —
ИСПЕСТРИТЬ, to variegate, — . . . .	ИСПЕЩРАТЬ, —
РАЗМЫСЛИТЬ, to meditate, — . . . .	РАЗМЫШЛЯТЬ, —
УМУДРИТЬСЯ, to grow wise, — . . . .	УМУДРАТЬСЯ, —
УХИТРИТЬСЯ, to use art, — . . . . .	УХИЩРАТЬСЯ, —
ПОГУБИТЬ, to ruin, II. 2. . . . .	ПОГУБЛЯТЬ, —
УТОМИТЬ, to fatigue, — . . . . .	УТОМЛЯТЬ, —
ПОТРАФИТЬ, to hit, — . . . . .	ПОТРАФЛЯТЬ, —
ОСЛЕПИТЬ, to blind, — . . . . .	ОСЛЕПЛЯТЬ, —
ПОСПѢШИТЬ, to hasten, II. 3. . . . .	ПОСПѢШАТЬ, I. 1.
СОВЕРШИТЬ, to perfect, — . . . . .	СОВЕРШАТЬ, —
ОЗНАЧИТЬ, to denote, — . . . . .	ОЗНАЧАТЬ, —
ОТЯГЧИТЬ, to burden, — . . . . .	ОТЯГЧАТЬ, —

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Повредить, to damage, II. 4. . . . .	повреждать, I. 1.
Побудить, to incite, — . . . . .	побуждать, —
Приблизить, to draw near, — . . . . .	приближать, —
Замѣтить, to remark, II. 5. . . . .	замѣчать, —
Погасить, to put out, II. 6. . . . .	погашать, —
Обольтить, to seduce, II. 7. . . . .	обольтать, —
Отомстить, to avenge, — . . . . .	отмщать, —
Посвятить, to hallow, — . . . . .	посвящать, —

c) Sometimes in the same verb the imperfect aspect is formed in two ways, with contraction and without contraction. Here we must remark that, if the prepositional verb retains its primitive, simple, physical meaning, the termination of its imperfect aspect is without contraction, and that on the contrary it is contracted, if the prepositional verb takes an abstract, figurative, intellectual acceptation, as is seen in the following examples:

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Разбранить, to scold, II. 1. . . . .	разбранивать, I. 1. . . . .	& Возбранить, to forbid, I. 1. . . . .	возбранять, I. 3. . . . .
Запалить, to kindle, — . . . . .	запаливать, — . . . . .	& Воспалить, to inflame, — . . . . .	воспалять, —
Переполюнуть, to fill, — . . . . .	переполюнчивать, — . . . . .	& Исполнить, to fulfil, — . . . . .	исполнять, —
Перестроить, to rebuild, — . . . . .	перестраивать, — . . . . .	& Устроить, to arrange, — . . . . .	устроить, —
Завострить, to sharpen, — . . . . .	завостривать, — . . . . .	& Поострить, to excite, — . . . . .	поощрять, —
Изловить, to catch, II. 2. . . . .	излавливать, — . . . . .	& Уловить, to surprise, II. 2. . . . .	уловлять, —
Подмочить, to wet, II. 3. . . . .	подмачивать, — . . . . .	& Омочить, to steep, II. 3. . . . .	омочать, I. 1. . . . .
Выучить, to teach, — . . . . .	выучивать, — . . . . .	& Научить, to initiate, — . . . . .	научать, —
Загородить, to fence, II. 4. . . . .	загораживать, — . . . . .	& Оградить, to guard, II. 4. . . . .	ограждать, —
Пересудить, to rejudge, — . . . . .	пересуживать, — . . . . .	& Осудить, to condemn, — . . . . .	осуждать, —
Осадить, to plant, — . . . . .	осаживать, — . . . . .	& Осадить, to besiege, — . . . . .	осажать, —
Выпередить, to outgo, — . . . . .	выперёживать, — . . . . .	& Предупредить, to prevent, — . . . . .	предупреждать, —
Вывердить, to rehearse, — . . . . .	вывёрживать, — . . . . .	& Утвердить, to affirm, — . . . . .	утверждать, —
Помутить, to muddy, II. 5. . . . .	помучивать, — . . . . .	& Возмутить, to raise, II. 7. . . . .	возмущать, —
Засвятить, to light, — . . . . .	засвѣчивать, — . . . . .	& Просвятить, to enlighten, — . . . . .	просвѣщать, —
Закрасить, to colour, II. 6. . . . .	закрашивать, — . . . . .	& Украсить, to adorn, II. 6. . . . .	украшать, —
Загоститься, to visit, II. 7. . . . .	загашиваться, — . . . . .	& Угостить, to regale, II. 7. . . . .	угощать, —

d) The inchoative verbs in *нѣтъ*, which by their nature have not the iterative aspect, take, in the

formation of the imperfect aspect of prepositional verbs, the termination *amb*, e. g.

1) Perfect aspect.	2) Imperfect asp.
Замёрзнуть, to freeze, III. 1. . . . .	замерзать, I. 1.
Потухнуть, to go out, — . . . . .	потухать, —
Погибнуть, to perish, — . . . . .	погибать, —
Окиснуть, to grow sour, — . . . . .	окисать, —
Утихнуть, to abate, — . . . . .	утихать, —
Погаснуть, to go out, — . . . . .	погасать, —
Озябнуть, to starve, — . . . . .	озябать, —
Замокнуть, to grow wet, — . . . . .	замокать, —
Иссохнуть, to dry up, — . . . . .	иссыхать, —
Издохнуть, to die, — . . . . .	издыхать, —
Привыкнуть, to habituate, — . . . . .	привыкать, —
Исчезнуть, to vanish, — . . . . .	исчезать, —

c) The Russian language has some prepositional verbs, the simple verb of which is no more used or is lost. Such are:

1) Perfect aspect.	2) Imperfect asp.
Оправдать, to justify, I. 1. . . . .	оправдывать, I. 1.
Обнародовать, to publish, I. 2. . . . .	обнародывать, —
Затянуть, to devise, I. 3. . . . .	затягивать, —
Одолеть, to surmount, I. 4. . . . .	одолевать, —
Укоренить, to root, II. 1. . . . .	укоренять, I. 3.
Водворить, to settle, — . . . . .	водворять, —
Разорить, to ruin, — . . . . .	разорять, —
Ударить, to strike, — . . . . .	ударять, —
Повторить, to repeat, — . . . . .	повторять, —
Истребить, to destroy, II. 2. . . . .	истреблять, —
Одушевить, to animate, — . . . . .	одушевлять, —
Усыновить, to adopt, — . . . . .	усыновлять, —
Надоумить, to instruct, — . . . . .	надоумливать, I. 1.
Приложить, to add, II. 3. . . . .	прилагать, —
Уничижить, to humble, — . . . . .	уничижать, —

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Уничтожить, to annihil. II. 3. . . . .	уничтожать, I. 1.
Вооружить, to arm, — . . . . .	вооружать, —
Внушить, to suggest, — . . . . .	внушать, —
Вручить, to hand, — . . . . .	вручать, —
Истощить, to exhaust, — . . . . .	истощать, —
Соорудить, to erect, II. 4. . . . .	сооружать, —
Победить, to vanquish, — . . . . .	побуждать, —
Усладить, to delight, — . . . . .	улаживать, —
Пронзить, to pierce, — . . . . .	пронзать, —
Обидеть, to offend, — . . . . .	обижать, —
Встретить, to meet, II. 5. . . . .	встречать, —
Отвѣтить, to answer, — . . . . .	отвѣчать, —
Воскресить, to revive, II. 6. . . . .	воскрешать, —
Помѣстить, to place, II. 7. . . . .	помыщать, —
Подушить, to instigate, — . . . . .	подушать, —
Посѣтить, to visit, — . . . . .	посѣщать, —
Укrotить, to appease, — . . . . .	укрoщать, —
Насытить, to satiate, — . . . . .	насыщать, —
Защитить, to protect, — . . . . .	защищать, —
Достигнуть, to reach, III. 1. . . . .	достигать, —
Воскреснуть, to resuscitate, — . . . . .	воскресать, —
Окунуть, to dip, — . . . . .	окунывать, —
Замкнуть, to lock, — . . . . .	замыкать, —
Ушибить, to bruise, — . . . . .	ушибать, —
Простерть, to extend, III. 2. . . . .	простира́ть, —
Обуть, to put shoes, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	обувать, —
Попрать, to trample, — . . . . .	попирать, —
Распять, to crucify, — . . . . .	распина́ть, —
Начать, to begin, — . . . . .	начина́ть, —
Отнять, to take out, — . . . . .	отнима́ть, —
Отверзти, to open, — . . . . .	отверза́ть, —
Обрести, to find out, — . . . . .	обрыва́ть, —
Счесть, to count, — . . . . .	счита́ть, —
Разсвѣсти, to grow light, — . . . . .	разсвѣта́ть, —
Запрячь, to put to, — . . . . .	запряга́ть, —

Among these verbs there are several which are also used with other prepositions besides those which are above indicated.

f) The following verbs do not form their perfect aspect from the imperfect aspect of the used simple verb, but from some disused aspect of this simple verb.

## 1) Perfect aspect.

## 2) Imperfect aspect.

Замѣнить, II. 1 (instead of *замѣнятъ*). замѣнять, to compensate, I. 3.  
 Застрѣлить, — (instead of *застрѣляютъ*). застрѣливать, to shoot, kill, I. 1.  
 Вскочить, II. 3 (instead of *вскакаютъ*). . . вскакивать, to leap in, —  
 Укусить, II. 6 (instead of *укусаютъ*). . . укусывать, to bite, —  
 Возвѣстить, II. 7 (instead of *возвѣщаютъ*). возвѣщать, to announce, —  
 Поглотить, — (instead of *поглощаютъ*). . . поглощать, to swallow up, —

g) Some prepositional verbs are formed irregularly, and occasionally they have two formations, one regular, and the other irregular. Such are:

## REGULAR FORMATION.

## IRREGULAR FORMATION.

## 1) Perfect aspect.

## 2) Imperfect aspect.

## 1) Perfect aspect.

## 2) Imperfect aspect.

Презрѣть, to despise, II. 1. . . презирать, I. 1	& Обозрѣть, to examine, II. 1. обозрѣвать, I. 1.
Сыскать, to find, II. 7. . . . . сыскивать, —	& Снискать, to obtain, II. 7. . . . . снискивать, —
Обуздать, to curb, I. 1. . . . . обуздывать, —	& Внуздать, to bridle, I. 1. . . . . внуздывать, —
Создать, to build, <i>irr.</i> (созыжду) созидать, —	& Создать (создаѣть), . . . . . создавать (создаѣу).
Нагрести, to rake up, <i>irr.</i> . . . . . нагребать, —	& Погребсти, to bury, <i>irr.</i> . . . . . погребать, I. 1.
Позволить, to permit, II. 1. . . . . позволять, I. 3	& Уволить, to discharge, II. 1. увольнять, I. 3.
Осмѣять, to deride, I. 3. . . . . осмѣивать, I. 1	& Насмѣяться, to laugh at, I. 3. насмѣхаться, I. 1
Обязать, to bind, II. 4. . . . . обязывать, —	& Обязать, to oblige, II. 4. . . . . обязывать, —
Сравнить, to even, I. 3. . . . . сравнивать, —	& Сравнить, to compare, II. 1. сравнивать, —
Принять, to take, <i>irr.</i> (приму) принимать, —	& Вынуть, to take out, III. 1. вынимать, —
Прябѣжать, to run up, <i>irr.</i> . . . . . прябѣгать, —	& Прибѣгнуть, to resort, III. 1. прибѣгать, —

h) Other prepositional verbs have no perfect aspect and therefore fall into the class of defective simple verbs; such are the following:

Обожать, to adore, I. 1.	Ожидать, to wait, I. 1.
Обладать, to dominate, —	Обитать, to habit, —
Объщать, to promise, —	Опасаться, to fear, —
Завѣщать, to bequeath, —	Обуревать, to agitate, —
Увѣщавать, to exhort, —	Подражать, to imitate, —
Охуждать, to criticize, —	Подобать, to be necessary, —
Осязать, to touch, —	Поричать, to blame, —

Подозрѣвать, to suspect, I. 1.	Ущербляться, to decrease, I. 3.
Сомнѣваться, to doubt, —	Сожалѣть, to take pity, I. 4.
Созерцать, to contemplate, —	Смыслить, to understand, II. 1.
Изобилловать, to abound, I. 2.	Состоять, to consist, —
Наслѣдовать, to inherit, —	Упрямиться, to be obstinate, II. 2.
Повиноваться, to obey, —	Содержать, to maintain, II. 3.
Привѣтствовать, to welcome, —	Предвидѣть, to foresee, II. 4.
Обонять, to scent, I. 3.	Походить, to resemble, —
Упражнять, to occupy, —	Зависѣть, to depend, II. 6.

i) Lastly the following simple verbs have the properties of prepositional verbs, in other words they express the accomplishment of an action without being joined to a preposition and without having the termination of unity in *нѣтъ*. They are called *perfect simple* verbs. Some of them have also the *iterative* aspect.

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>	3) <i>Iterative asp.</i>
Благословить, to bless, II. 2.	благословлять, I. 3.	—
Бросить, to throw, II. 6.	бросать, I. 1.	брасывать.
Быть, to be, <i>irr.</i>	бывать, —	бывывать.
Велѣть, to order, II. 1.	(велѣть)	велѣвывать.
Воротить, to turn, II. 5.	ворочать, I. 1.	ворачивать.
Дать, to give, <i>irr.</i>	давать, — (даю)	—
Дѣть, to put, <i>irr.</i>	дѣвать, —	—
Женить, to marry, II. 1.	(женить)	—
Казнить, to execute, II. 1.	(казнить)	—
Кѣнчить, to end, II. 3.	кончать, —	кѣнчивать.
Купить, to buy, II. 2.	(покупать).	—
Лечь, to lie, <i>irr.</i>	ложиться, II. 3.	—
Лишить, to deprive, II. 3.	лишать, I. 1.	—
Пасть, to fall, <i>irr.</i>	падать, —	(падать).
Плѣнить, to captivate, II. 1.	плѣнять, I. 3.	—
Простить, to pardon, II. 7.	прощать, I. 1.	—
Пустить, to let go, —	пускать and пуцать, —	—
Ранить, to hurt, II. 1.	(ранить)	—
Родить, to beget, II. 4.	рожать and раждать, —	—

1) Perfect aspect.	2) Imperfect aspect.	3) Iterative asp.
Рѹшѣть, to break down, II. 3. . . . .	рѹшѣть) . . . . .	рѹшѣвать.
Рѣшѣть, to decide, II. 3. . . . .	рѣшѣть, — . . . . .	—
Свободѣть, to deliver, II. 4. . . . .	свободѣть, — . . . . .	—
Стать, { to become, <i>irr.</i> . . . . становѣться, II. 2. . . . .	становѣться, II. 2. . . . .	становѣиваться.
Стать, { to be sufficient, <i>irr.</i> ставѣть, I. 1. (стаю) . . . . .	ставѣть, I. 1. (стаю) . . . . .	—
Ступѣть, to go, II. 2. . . . .	ступѣть, — . . . . .	—
Сѣсть, to sit, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	сѣдѣть, II. 4. . . . .	—
Хватѣть, to seize, II. 5. . . . .	хватѣть, I. 1. . . . .	хвачивать.
Явѣть, to show, II. 2. . . . .	явѣть, I. 3. . . . .	—
Ять, to take, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	имѣть, I. 1. and II. 2 (имѣю & ѣмлю). —	—

To the list of perfect simple verbs we must add some verbs taken from foreign languages and ending in *овать*, e. g. *атаковать*, to attack; *конфисковать*, to confiscate, which express both the perfect and imperfect aspects with the same termination and without preposition.

The verbs *велѣть*, *женѣть*, *казнѣть*, *рѣшѣть* and *рѹшѣть*, do not change their termination to form the perfect and imperfect aspects; the perfect future (*велю*, *женю*, *казню*, *рѣню* and *рѹшу*) is also used for the present. In the verb *купѣть*, the present and the imperfect preterit are borrowed from the prepositional verb *покупѣть*. The verbs *даровѣть*, to give; *миновѣть*, to pass, and *образовѣть*, to form, as well as the inflections *даровѣль*, *миновѣль* and *образовѣль*, are of the perfect aspect; but the inflections *дарю*, *мину* and *образю* are of the present. The verb *миновѣть* forms its future with *мину*, *минешь*, and the preterit has the two inflections *минуль* and *миновѣль*.

With regard to the perfect simple verbs we remark that in such of them as express a physical action, performed by a single motion (as *бросѣть*, *дать*, *дѣть*, *пасть*, *пустѣть*, *ступѣть*, *хватѣть*, *ять*) the meaning of their perfect aspect is the same as that of the aspect of unity in complete verbs (§ 62).

These perfect simple verbs, with the exception of *благословѣть*, *женѣть*, *казнѣть*, *лжѣть*, *рѣшѣть* and *плѣнѣть*, form also prepositional verbs. Such are:

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*

Забѣть, to forget, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	забываѣть, I. 1.
Повелѣть, to order, II. 1. . . . .	повелѣваѣть, —
Раздаѣть, to distribute, <i>irr.</i> . . . .	раздаваѣть, —
Одѣть, to dress, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	одѣваѣть, —
Раскупѣть, to buy up, II. 2. . . . .	раскупаѣть, —
Залѣчь, to hide one's self, <i>irr.</i> . . .	залѣгаѣть, —
Упаѣсть, to fall, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	упадаѣть, —
Распростѣться, to take leave, II. 7. .	распрощаѣться, —
Пропустѣть, to let pass, — . . . . .	пропускаѣть, —
Уродѣть, to produce, II. 4. . . . .	урожаѣть, —
Разруѣшить, to destroy, II. 6. . . . .	разрушаѣть, —
Разрѣшить, to decide, — . . . . .	разрѣшаѣть, —
Освободѣть, to free, II. 4. . . . .	освобождать, —
Достаѣть, to procure, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	доставаѣть, —
Остановѣть, to stop, II. 2. . . . .	останавливаѣть, —
Выступѣть, to go out, II. 2. . . . .	выступаѣть, —
Засѣѣсть, to sit, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	засѣдаѣть, —
Изъявѣть, to indicate, II. 2. . . . .	изъявляѣть, I. 3.

The verbs *бросѣть*, *воротѣть*, *кѣнѣть* and *хватѣть* have the two perfect aspects in their prepositional verbs, like those derived from the complete simple verbs, as we shall subsequently see. For the prepositional verbs derived from *ятѣ*, see § 65. 3.

3. Such prepositional verbs as are derived from the *complete* simple verbs, have in addition to the preceding *perfect* and *imperfect* aspects, a second perfect aspect, which, being formed from the aspect of unity of the simple verb, indicates that the action has been or will be performed at one time and by a single movement, whereas the perfect aspect, which is formed from the imperfect aspect of the simple verb, indicates that the action has been or will be accomplished by various motions, and that occupied or will occupy a certain length of time.



The same remark applies to such prepositional verbs as are formed from certain double verbs, and also from the perfect simple verbs бросить, воротить, кончить and хватить; e. g.

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*a) *of duration.*b) *of unity.*

Выболтать, I. 1.	выболтнуть, III. 1.	выбалтывать, to divulge, I. 1.
Накидать, — .	накинуть, — . .	накидывать, to heap up, —
Вспорхать, — .	вспорхнуть, — .	вспархивать, to flutter, —
Выпрыгать, — .	выпрыгнуть, — .	выпрыгивать, to skip out, —
Столкать, — .	столкнуть, — .	сталкивать, to push down, —
Захлопать, — .	захлопнуть, — .	захлопывать, to shut with a clap, —
Забрызгать, — .	забрызнуть, — .	забрызгивать, to besprinkle, —
Всовать, I. 2.	всунуть, — . .	всовывать, to shove in, —
Выклевать, — .	выклонуть, — .	выклевывать, to peck out, —
Придавить, II. 2.	придагнуть, — .	придавливать, to press to, —
Окликать, II. 5.	окликнуть, — .	окликать, to call to, —
Сдуть, <i>irr.</i> . .	сдунуть, — .	сдувать, to blow off, —
Поджечь, — .	поджигнуть, — .	поджигать, to fire, —
Вывалить, I. 3.	вывалить, II. 1.	вываливать, to throw out, —
Прокатать, I. 1.	прокатить, II. 5.	прокатывать, to roll through, —
Выломать, — .	выломить, II. 2.	выламывать, to break out, —
Сронять, I. 3.	сронить, II. 1.	срывать, to throw down, —
Вытащить, I. 1.	вытащить, II. 3.	вытаскивать, to pull out, —
Забросать, — .	забросить, II. 6.	забрасывать, to throw beyond, —
Сворочать, — .	своротить, II. 5.	сворачивать, to avert, —
Окончать, — .	окончить, II. 3.	оканчивать, to terminate, —
Захватать, — .	захватить, II. 5.	захватывать, to catch, —

The simple verbs говорить, ловить, бить, брать and класть, to indicate an action performed by one movement, borrow their perfect aspect from another verb; as:

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Perfect aspect.* \*a) *of duration.*      b) *of unity.*

Говорить, to speak, say, II. 1.	поговорить .	сказать, II. 4.
Ловить, to seize, catch, II. 2.	изловить . .	поймать, I. 1.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Perfect aspect.*

	a) of duration.	b) of unity.
Бить, to beat, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	побить . . .	удáрить, II. 1.
Брать, to take, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	побрáть, . .	взять, <i>irr.</i> (возьму́).
Класть, to lay, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	покла́сть . .	положи́ть, II. 3.

4. From the *double* simple verbs two prepositional verbs are formed, which with their two aspects, the *perfect* and the *imperfect*, have each a particular signification. Such are:

1) From the *definite* verb.2) From the *indefinite* verb.

a) <i>Perfect asp.</i>	b) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>	a) <i>Perfect asp.</i>	b) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Выбрести, <i>irr.</i> выбродить, to go out, II. 4.		& Выбродить, II. 4.	выбра́живать, to ferment, I. 1.
Выбьжать, — выбьгáть, to flee, I. 1. . .		& Выбьгáть, I. 1.	выбьгáнвать, to precede, —
Завезти́, — завозить, to bring back, II. 4.		& Завозить, II. 4.	зава́живать, to transport, —
Провести́, — проводить, to conduct, —		& Проводить, —	провожа́ть, to accompany, —
Загна́ть, — загоня́ть, to drive, I. 3.		& Загоня́ть, I. 3.	зага́нывать, to harass, —
Выйти. — . . .	выходи́ть, to go out, II. 4.	& Выходи́ть, II. 4.	выха́живать, to obtain, —
Влетѣть, II. 5.	влетáть, to fly in, I. 1. . .	& Перелетáть, I. 1.	перелѣтывáть, to fly by, —
Донести́, <i>irr.</i> доно́сить, to denounce, II. 6.	& Доно́сить, II. 6.	доно́шивать, to wear out, —	
Вползти́, — вполза́ть, to creep in, I. 1.	& Отполза́ть, I. 1.	отполáзывать, to go away, —	
Вы́ехать, — .	выѣ́зжать, to go out, I. 1.	& Выѣ́здить, II. 4.	выѣ́живать, to train, —

From the other double verbs are formed prepositional verbs as from the incomplete or complete verbs. The verbs *валить*, *катить*, *ломить*, *ронить* and *тащить* form prepositional verbs with the two perfect aspects of duration and of unity, as we have seen above.

## EXERCISES ON THE VERBS.

Regular verbs. I do good, as much as I wish. Thou desirest in-  
 — Я дѣлать добро́, сколько́ я желáть. Ты желáть  
*Present.* struct thyself. He imagines that he knows all the sciences,  
 учиться. Онъ думáть что онъ знáть весь нау́ка,  
 and he boasts of his success. We dare not believe in  
 и хвáстать (*instr.*) свой успѣхъ. Я дерзáть не вѣрять (*dat.*)

your words, even when you speak the truth. My neighbours  
ваше слово, хотя ты говорить правда. Мой соседъ

only live on bread, and trust in Providence.  
одинъ питаться (*instr.*) хлѣбъ, и уповать на (*acc.*) Провидѣніе.

You trade in cloth, and you ask much.  
Ты торговать (*instr.*) сукно, и ты требовать (*gen.*) многое.

The pigeon cooes; the turtle moans; dogs bark; puppies  
Голубь ворковать; черепаха стонать; собака лаять; щенокъ

yelp; the frog croaks; the raven croaks; the crow caws;  
блещать; лягушка квакать; воронъ глать; ворона каркать;

lions roar; the stag bells; fowls cluck; the cat  
левъ рычать; олень токовать; курица кудахтать; кошка

mews; oxen bellow; the bee hums; the serpent hisses;  
мяукает; быкъ мычать; пчела жужжать; змея шипеть;

eagles scream; nightingales twitter; sheep and lambs  
орёл трубить; соловей щебетать; овца и агненокъ

bleat; pigs grunt; the fox yelps; the ass brays; the  
блещать; свинья хрюкать; лиса визжать; осёл реветъ;

turkey gobbles; the quail calls; the cock crows;  
калхунъ хлопать; перепелка вавать; петухъ кукурекать;

the magpie chatters; the parrot prates. The thunder roars;  
сорока скрекотать; попугай болтать. Громъ греметь;

water boils; the doors creak; the brooks murmur; the fire  
вода кипеть; дверь скрипеть; ручей жужжать; огонь

crackles; the stars twinkle; the sun shines; honey-bees  
трещать; звезда сверкать; солнце свѣтить; пчела

swarm; diamonds sparkle; dry leaves rattle; the wind  
роить; алмазъ блестя; сухой листъ хрустѣть; вѣтеръ

whistles; the snow melts. The sun illumines the earth with  
свистать; снѣгъ таять. Солнце озарять землю (*instr.*)

its rays, warms and vivifies her. The earth turns  
свой лучъ, грѣть и живить онъ. Земля обращаться  
round the sun. You grieve in vain.  
вокругъ (*gen.*) солнце. Ты горевать напрасно.

*Preterit.* I walked yesterday on the bank of the river, when  
Я гулять вчера по (*dat.*) берегъ рѣка, когда  
the sun was setting. My sister sat under a tree,  
солнце садиться. Мой сестра сидѣть поды (*instr.*) дерево,  
which was shaken by the wind. Yesterday we worked,  
который качаться (*instr.*) вѣтеръ. Вчера я работать,  
read, wrote and drew much. The sheep perished  
читать, писать и рисовать много. Овца мерѣть  
through the cold. His mother has been dead a long time.  
отъ (*gen.*) стѣжа. Онъ мать умерѣть давно.

The enemies have shut him up in the fortress. This  
Непріятель заперѣть онъ въ (*prep.*) крѣпость. Этотъ  
man has become blind, and his wife has become deaf. My  
человѣкъ ослѣпнуть, и онъ жена оглохнуть. Мой  
trees have withered, and my flowers have faded.  
дерево высохнуть, и мой цвѣтъ завянуть.

*Future.* Moscow will shine long at the head of the cities  
Москвѣ красоваться долго во (*prep.*) главѣ городъ  
of Russia. Thou wilt play, and I shall write. The empire  
русскій. Ты играть, и я писать. Государство  
of Russia will develop itself incessantly, and acquire constantly  
Россійскій возвышаться безпрерывно, и приобрѣтать всегда  
more force and glory. A great monarch will never  
болѣе (*gen.*) сила и слава. Великій государь не никогда  
die.  
умерѣть.

*Imperative.* Do what thou art bidden, and do not think of resisting.  
Дѣлать что ты говорить, и не думать упрямиться.

Do not lose hope, and trust in God. Go home,  
 Не терять надежда, и уповать на (acc.) Богъ. Ступать домой,  
 and do not dispute so much. Do not lose thy time, and  
 и не толковать столько. Не тратить (gen.) время, и  
 do not torment the animals. Speak always the truth, and  
 не мучить (gen.) животное. Говорить всегда правда, и  
 do not dispute about trifles.  
 не спорить о (prep.) пустякъ.

The nightingale sings; the horse neighs; the wolf howls. Irregular  
 Соловей петь; лошадь ржать; волкъ выть. verbs.

There are animals which sleep during the whole winter.  
 Быть зверь, который спать (acc.) весь зима.

Thou takest much upon thyself, and I do not under-  
 Ты брать много на (acc.) себя, и я не браться  
 take this affair. How do you crumple this book? Не  
 за (acc.) этотъ дѣю. Зачѣмъ ты мять этотъ книга. Онъ  
 lives at Moscow, and is thought to be a rich man.  
 жить въ (prep.) Москвѣ, и слыть (instr.) богатый человекъ.

The shepherd shears the sheep; the peasants spin the flax  
 Пастухъ стрижъ овца; крестьянинъ прясть лёнъ

and weave the linen. He wishes to sleep, and you wish  
 и ткать жолсть. Онъ хотѣтъ спать, и ты хотѣтъ

to play. My neighbour kept me as his own son, and could  
 играть. Мой сосѣдъ беречь я какъ родной сынъ, и мочь

not part with me. The enemies have burnt several  
 не разстаться со (instr.) я. Непріятель сжечь много  
 towns; they were inflamed by hatred and vengeance. The  
 городъ; онъ увлечься (instr.) злоба и мщеніе.

shepherd pastured the sheep in the meadow. I will send  
 Пастухъ пастіи овца на (prep.) лугъ. Я послать

for the doctor, and thou wilt send me money. This  
 за (instr.) лѣкарь, и ты прислать я (gen.) деньги.. Этотъ

town is flourishing, and it will flourish long through its  
 ГОРОДЪ ЦВѢСТИ, и ОНЪ ЦВѢСТИ ДОЛГО (*instr.*)

strength and wealth. I will give thee a book, and thou, what  
 СИЛА и БОГАТСТВО. Я ДАТЬ ТЫ КНИГА, и ТЫ ЧТО  
 wilt thou give me? Thou canst not say: what will he give  
 ДАТЬ Я? ТЫ МОЖЬ НЕ ГОВОРИТЬ: ЧТО ОНЪ ДАТЬ

me for that? Do not take upon thyself,  
 Я ЗА (*acc.*) ЭТОТЪ? НЕ БРАТЬ НА (*acc.*) СЕБЯ (*gen.*) ТОТЪ (*gen.*)  
 what thou canst not perform. Children, live in peace, do not  
 ЧТО ТЫ МОЖЬ НЕ ИСПОЛНИТЬ. ДѢТЯ, ЖИТЬ ЖІРНО, НЕ  
 swear, never lie, and behave yourselves well.  
 КЛЯСТЬСЯ, НЕ НИКОГДА ЛГАТЬ, и вѣсти себя хорошенько.

Definite and  
 indefinite  
 imperfect  
 aspect.

Beasts walk and run, birds and flies fly, fishes  
 ЗВѢРЬ ХОДИТЬ и БѢГАТЬ, ПТИЦА и МУХА ЛЕТАТЬ, РЫБА

swim, and worms crawl. See, a soldier is coming  
 ПЛАВАТЬ, и ЧЕРВЬ ПОЛЗАТЬ. ПОСМОТРѢТЬ, СОЛДАТЪ ИДТИ

here; behind him runs a dog. Thou seest, how this  
 сюда; за (*instr.*) ОНЪ БѢЖАТЬ СОБАКА. ВИДѢТЬ, КАКЪ ЭТОТЪ

swallow flies fast; they fly always so. This mariner  
 ЛАСТОЧКА ЛЕТЕТЬ БЫСТРО; ОНЪ ЛЕТАТЬ ВСЕГДА ТАКЪ. СЕЙ МОРЯКЪ

has long sailed on the Black Sea. What is swimming  
 ДОЛГО ПЛАВАТЬ ПО (*dat.*) ЧЕРНЫЙ МОРЕ. ЧТО . ПЛЫТЬ

there on the water? The wives of the Slavonians carried  
 ТАМЪ НА (*prep.*) ВОДА? ЖЕНА СЛАВЯНИНЪ НОСИТЬ

water and fetched wood. What dost thou carry in  
 ВОДА и ТАСКАТЬ ДРОВА. ЧТО ТЫ НЕСТИ ВЪ (*prep.*)

this bag? See, what a heap of wood this  
 ЭТОТЪ МѢШОКЪ? СМОТРѢТЬ, КАКОЙ ВЯЗАНКА ДРОВА ЭТОТЪ

man is drawing. One saw then what one had not  
 ЧЕЛОВѢКЪ ТАЩИТЬ. ВИДѢТЬ ТОГДА (*gen.*) ЧТО НЕ

seen for a long time.

ВИДАТЬ ДОТѢЛЬ.

The enemy dashed into the town and seized the Perfect aspect of duration and of unity.  
 Непріятель рвѣться въ (acc.) городъ и кидаться на (acc.)  
 booty. It began to lighten. It lightened, there was  
 корысть. Засверкать молнія. Сверкать молнія, гремѣть  
 violent clap of thunder, the earth trembled, the church  
 сильный громъ, землія дрожать, церковь  
 was shaken. My brother went to bed, and began to snore.  
 затрясаться. Мой братъ лечь и захрапѣть.  
 He gave a loud snore and awoke. May I hope, that  
 Храпѣть громко и просыпаться. Мочь я надѣяться, что  
 my lyre will touch once more your hard heart? The sun  
 мой лира трогать ещё вашъ хладный сердце? Солнце  
 began to shine, but not for a long time; it shone for a moment  
 заблестѣть, но не надолго; блестя  
 and disappeared. We have thrown out of the window all  
 и скрывать. Я выбрасывать за (acc.) окно весь  
 the sweepings; among the sweepings we have thrown out  
 соръ; въ (prep.) соръ я выбрасывать  
 also a paper of importance.  
 и бумага важная.

Last year I often went to the town. Socrates Iterative aspect.  
 (gen.) Пршлый годъ я ходить въ (acc.) городъ. Сократъ  
 was accustomed to say. The Germans had long inhabited  
 говорить. Немець издавна жить  
 Novgorod. When living at Moscow, I  
 въ (prep.) Новгородъ. Жить въ (prep.) Москва, я  
 often went to the monastery of the Trinity. In my youth  
 ѣздить въ (acc.) Лавра Троицкій. Въ (acc.) молодой лѣто  
 I often lived in the country.  
 я жить въ (prep.) деревня.

If the stones could speak, they would teach thee Conditional and Subjunctive.  
 Если бы камень мочь говорить, онъ научить бы ты

prudence. If any one had come to us (*gen.*) острожность. Если бы кто нибудь войти къ (*dat.*) я at this moment, he would have seen us in despair въ (*acc.*) этотъ минута, онъ увидѣть бы я въ (*prep.*) отчаяніе, and would have heard our groans and our sighs. There и услышать бы нашъ стenanіе и нашъ вздохъ. Есть are few things in the world, on which I маю (*gen.*) предметъ въ (*prep.*) свѣтъ, на (*acc.*) который я have not fixed my attention. There was no heart не обращать бы (*gen.*) вниманіе. Быть (*gen.*) не сердце so insensible that it did not melt into tears. такой каменный, который не называться бы въ (*prep.*) слеза.

The different tenses and aspects.

This soldier has served long and has received for his service a pension. It is not every soldier that will obtain *Этотъ солдатъ служить долго и выслуживать пенсію. Не всякій выслуживать* with such distinction. He was in many battles and distinguished himself everywhere by his remarkable courage. He distinguished himself particularly at the capture of a battery of the enemies. He mounted first on the parapet, killed the hostile soldier, and the first на (*acc.*) брустверъ, убивать непріятельскій солдатъ, и captured a cannon. For that he was rewarded by a взять пушка. За (*acc.*) это онъ награждать (*instr.*) decoration. Afterwards he was rewarded also with other орденъ. Потомъ онъ награждать и (*instr.*) другой marks of distinction. Now he will return to his country, отличіе. Теперь онъ отправляться въ (*acc.*) родина,



will establish himself with his family, and will relate  
 поселяться въ (*prep.*) своей семьѣ, и разсказывать о (*prep.*)  
 his campaigns, how he marched against the Turks and  
 свой походъ, какъ ходить на (*acc.*) Турокъ и  
 the French, how he beat the enemy, how he endured hunger,  
 Французъ, какъ быть врагъ, какъ терпѣть голодъ,  
 suffered from his wounds, and consoled himself with the  
 страдать отъ (*gen.*) рана, и утѣшаться (*instr.*)  
 thought that he is serving his sovereign with heart and  
 мысль, что онъ служить (*dat.*) своей Государь (*instr.*) сердце и  
 soul. Trust in me.  
 душа. Уповать на (*acc.*) я.

## THE PARTICIPLE.

66.—The *participles* (причастія) have, as a part Division of the verb (§ 53) *voice*, *aspect* and *tense*, and, as the participles, adjectives, that they may agree with their substantive, they have *gender*, *number* and *case*. As regards voice, they are *active* or *neuter* (or, with the pronoun *я*, pronominal) and *passive*. They have the same number of aspects as the verbs whence they are derived, but they have only two tenses, the *present* and *preterit*.

67.—The *active* and *neuter* (as also the pronominal) participles are formed as follows: Active and neuter participles.

1. The *present* participle is formed from the third person plural of the present indicative by changing the termination *тѣ* into *щій* (neut. *щие*, fem. *щая*), and this without any exception; e. g. дѣлающій,

*making*; любящій, *loving*; кричащій, *crying*; несущій, *bearing* (from дѣлаютъ, любятъ, кричатъ, несутъ).

2. The *preterit* or past participle is formed from the preterit indicative, by changing *лѣ* into *вшій*, and *ѣ* (in such verbs as have not *лѣ* in the preterit) into *шій* (neut. *шее*, fem. *шая*); e. g. дѣлавшій, *having made*; носившій, *having borne*; потушшій, *being extinguished*; трёшшій, *having rubbed* (from дѣлалъ, носилъ, потушѣлъ, трёсъ). An exception to this rule is found in some irregular verbs in *ѣу* and *ѣу*, which, though forming their preterit in *лѣ*, change *ѣ* of the present (or of the future) into *шій*; these are: блюшшій, *having kept*; ведшшій, *having lead*; падшшій (and павшшій), *having fallen*; прядшшій, *having spun*; плетшшій, *having plaited*; метшшій, *having swept*; обрѣтшшій, *having found*; цвѣтшшій, *having flowered* (from блюдѣу, ведѣу, падѣу, прядѣу, плетѣу, метѣу, обрѣтѣу and цвѣтѣу), and also увядшшій, *being faded*; шѣдшшій, *having gone*; четшшій, *having counted* (from увѣяну, идѣу and чѣту).

Passive  
participles.

68.—The *passive* participles, which are only formed from active verbs, are used both with the full and the apocopated termination, ending: *a*) in the *present*, in *емый*, *имый* or *омый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*) in the full, and in *емѣ*, *имѣ* or *омѣ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*) in the apocopated termination, *b*) in the *preterit*, in *нмый* or *мый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*) in the full, and in *нѣ* or *мѣ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*) in the apocopated termination.

1. The *present* participle is formed from the first person plural of the present indicative, by chang-

ing the termination *лѣ* into *мый*, as: *дѣлаемый*, *being made*; *любимый*, *being loved* (from *дѣлаемъ* and *любимъ*). But *движу*, *I move*, and *борю*, *I conquer*, from *движимый* and *боримый* (instead of *движемый* and *боремый*). The irregular verbs with the first person in *ѣмъ* (i. e. with the accent), have *омый*, resuming the guttural consonant; e. g. *зовомый*, *being called*; *трясомый*, *being shaken*; *берегомый*, *being kept*; *печомый*, *being baked* (from *зовѣмъ*, *трясѣмъ*, *бережѣмъ*, *печѣмъ*), and in like manner *сосомый*, *being sucked*; *псѣкомый*, *being sought* (from *сосѣмъ* and *ищѣмъ*).

2. The *preterit* participle is formed of the preterit of the indicative by changing *лѣ* of the terminations *а.лѣ*, *я.лѣ* and *н.лѣ*, into *нный* with permutation of the commutable consonants or with intercalation of the consonant *л*, as also in the first person of the present; *лѣ* and *ѣ* of the terminations *олѣ*, *нулѣ* and *ѣ*, into *тый*; e. g. *дѣланный*, *done*; *разсѣянный*, *dispersed*; *видѣнный*, *seen*; *палѣнный*, *burnt*; *явлен- ный*, *shown*; *винчѣнный*, *screwed*; *колѣтый*, *pricked*; *двинутый*, *moved*; *тѣртый*, *rubbed* (from *дѣла.лѣ*, *разсѣя.лѣ*, *видѣ.лѣ*, *па.лѣ.лѣ*, *явѣ.лѣ*, *винтѣ.лѣ*, *колѣ.лѣ*, *дви.ну.лѣ*, *тѣрѣ*).

The passive participles of the irregular verbs, which also present some irregularities in their formation, have been given in the List of the irregular verbs, pages 138—141.

69.—The participles, being used as adjectives, and as such agreeing with their substantive in gender, number and case, are declined like the qualifying adjectives (§ 40, parad. 4). The active and neuter participles are only used in the full ter- Declension  
of the  
participles.

mination, while the passive participles are used both in the full and the apocopated.

Passive  
verbs.

70.—The passive participles, both present and preterit, with the apocopated termination, joined to the auxiliary verb *быть*, form what is called the passive verb (страдательные глаголы); e. g. сынъ *(есть)* любимъ своимъ отцемъ, *the son is loved by his father*; ученикъ былъ награждёнъ за прилежаніе, *the scholar has been rewarded for his assiduity*. We have here to remark that from the present and preterit of the passive participles are formed two aspects of the passive verb: the imperfect and the perfect aspect. As regards the present, preterit and future tenses, they are determined by the auxiliary verb *быть*, as seen below.

1) *Imperfect asp.*

2) *Perfect asp.*

- |                      |                              |                             |
|----------------------|------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1. <i>Present</i> :  | я <i>(есть)</i> награждаемъ. | я <i>(есть)</i> награждёнъ. |
| 2. <i>Preterit</i> : | я былъ награждаемъ.          | я былъ награждёнъ.          |
| 3. <i>Future</i> :   | я буду награждаемъ.          | я буду награждёнъ.          |

### EXERCISES ON THE PARTICIPLES.

Active and  
neuter par-  
ticiples.

The man who loves truth, hates falsehood. The child  
Человѣкъ любить правда, ненавидѣть ложь. Дитя  
that bathes; the dog that attacks passers by. The  
купаться; собака бросаться на (acc.) прохожій.  
tradesman who received the goods from London,  
Купецъ, получать товаръ изъ (gen.) Лондонъ,  
sold them advantageously. The tradesman who has received  
продавать онъ выгодно. Купецъ получить  
the goods from London, has sold them advantageously.  
товаръ изъ (gen.) Лондонъ, продать онъ выгодно.

Suffering from illness, he seeks relief. Light  
 Страда́ть (*instr.*) боле́знь, иска́ть (*gen.*) облегче́ние. Заже́чь  
 the candle which has gone out, and wipe the window  
 свеча́ поту́хнуть, и вы́тереть сте́кло  
 which is frozen. Glory to the hero who has saved his  
 замёрзнуть. Сла́ва геро́ю спа́сти свой  
 country. The roaring lion, the bellowing ox, the barking  
 оте́чество. Рыка́ть левъ, мыча́ть быкъ, ла́ять  
 dog, the crowing cock, the cooing dove, express their  
 соба́ка, петь пту́хъ, воркова́ть го́лубь, выража́ть свой  
 feelings and wants.  
 чу́ство и жела́ние.

The sea agitated by the winds frightens the sailors. *Passive participles.*  
 Мо́ре, волну́ять вѣтръ, устраша́ть плыве́ць.

The daughter beloved by her father, seeks to deserve his  
 До́чь, люби́ть оте́цъ, иска́ть заслужи́вать о́нь  
 love. One must succour the unfortunate man, harassed  
 люблю́. До́лжно помога́ть (*dat.*) несчастны́й, гна́ть  
 by fate and pursued by disasters. This is skimmed milk,  
 судьба́ и преслѣ́довать неуда́ча. Э́тотъ сня́ть моло́ко,  
 and here is rappee snuff. It is a loaded gun. In the  
 и вотъ терѣ́ть таба́къ. Э́тотъ заря́дить ружьё. На (*prep.*)  
 market they sell killed geese, tarred ropes, little  
 рыно́къ продава́ться битъ гусь, смоли́ть верёвка, откорми́ть  
 sucking pigs, and shorn sheep.  
 поросёно́къ и стри́чь овца́.

Russia is inhabited by various nations. Good sovereigns *Passive verbs.*  
 Росси́я обита́ть (*instr.*) мно́го наро́дъ. До́брый госуда́рь  
 are loved by their subjects and respected by their neighbours.  
 люби́ть свой по́дданный и уважа́ть сосѣ́дь.  
 The Tartars have been vanquished and defeated in the  
 Татари́нь побѣди́ть и разби́ть на (*prep.*)

plains of Koulikof. Thy labours will be crowned with  
 поле Куликовъ. Твой трудъ увѣнчать (*instr.*)

success. Nouns are declined, and verbs conjugated. This  
 успѣхъ. Имя склонять и глаголъ спрягать. Сей

great captain will be revered by posterity. Moscow  
 великій полководецъ чтить въ (*prep.*) потомство. Москвѣ

has been devastated and burnt by the enemies. This gun  
 разорить и сжечь врагъ. Этотъ ружье

is charged. This book is well bound.  
 зарядить. Этотъ книга прекрасно переплетать.

#### THE ADVERB AND THE GERUND.

Division of  
 the adverbs.

71.—The *adverbs* (нарѣчія) are divided into different classes according to their meaning:

1. Adverbs of *quality* or *manner* (нарѣчія качества), e. g. такъ, *thus*; иначе, *otherwise*; хорошо, *well*; худо, *badly*; нарочно, *intentionally*; скоро, *quickly*; напрасно, *in vain*; наугадъ, *at random*; заодно, *by agreement*; по-своему, *in one's own way*, &c.

2. Adverbs of *time* (времени), e. g. вчера, *yesterday*; сегодня, *to-day*; завтра, *to-morrow*; утромъ, *in the morning*; вечеромъ, *in the evening*; нынѣ, *now*; тепѣрь, *at present*; тогда, *then*; послѣ, *afterwards*; прежде, *before*; иногда, *sometimes*; тотчасъ, *presently*, &c.

3. Adverbs of *place* (мѣста): a) such as indicate a place without motion: здѣсь, *here*; тамъ, *there*; нигдѣ, *nowhere*; дома, *at home*; вездѣ, *everywhere*; b) such as indicate the place to which the action

is directed: сюда, *hither*; туда, *thither*; нигудá, *nowhere*; домо́й, *home*; всюду, *everywhere*; с) such as indicate the place whence the action proceeds; e. g. отсюда, *from here*; отту́да, *from there*; извне́, *from without*; снару́жн, *from the exterior*; отвсю́ду, *from all sides*, &c.

4. Adverbs of *order* (порядка); e. g. во-пе́рвыхъ, *firstly*; во-вторы́хъ, *secondly*; пото́мъ, *subsequently*, &c.

5. Adverbs of *quantity* (ко́личества); e. g. до-во́льно, *enough*; ма́ло, *little*; мно́го, *much*; нѣ-ско́лько, *some*, &c.

6. *Implicit* (замѣнительныя) adverbs, as: да, *yes*; нѣтъ, *no*; мо́ль, де, *says he*, &c.

7. *Interrogative* (вопросительныя) adverbs; e. g. ко́гда, *when?* доко́ль, *how long?* гдѣ, *where* (with-  
out motion)? куда́, *where* (with motion)? оте́уда, *whence?* ско́лько, *how much?* заче́мъ, *why?* &c.

72.—Adverbs are for the most part derivatives, being formed from nouns, adjectives, pronouns or verbs. Nouns in the instrumental and other cases are often employed adverbially: e. g. крѹгомъ, *in a circle*; верхомъ, *on horseback*; даромъ, *gratis*; на показъ, *for show*; въ торопѣхъ, *in haste*, &c. Every qualifying adjective, in the apocopated termination of the neuter gender, can become an adverb, as: окраси́ть бѣло́, *синѣ, to dye white, blue*; поступи́ть хоро́шо, *to conduct himself well*. The possessive and circumstantial adjectives form adverbs of manner by means of the preposition *по*, as: по-человѣчн, *as a man*; по-ру́сски, *in Russian*;

Formation  
of the ad-  
verbs.

по-дру́жески, *as a friend*; по-звѣ́рному, *like beasts*; по-мо́ему, *according to my view*.

Degrees of comparison.

73.—The adverbs formed from qualifying adjectives admit of degrees of comparison; e. g. умно́, *wisely*, and умнѣ́, *more wisely*; хоро́шо, *well*, and лу́чше, *better*; покóрко, *humbly*, and всепоко́рнѣйше, *very humbly*. We must here remark that the comparative of the adverbs is the same as that of the adjectives in the apocopated termination, with the exception of the five adverbs: бо́льше, *more*; ме́нше, *less*; до́льше, *longer*; да́льше, *further*; то́нше, *more finely*, which must be distinguished from the adjectives бо́льше, *greater*; ме́ньше, *less*; до́льше, *longer*; да́льше, *more distant*; то́ньше, *finer*. The qualifying adverbs can also be used in the diminutive and augmentative aspects; e. g. спнева́то, *bluishly*; ма́ленько, *a little*; немно́жко, *not much*; поху́же, *a little worse*; преумно́, *very wisely*.

Gerunds.

74.—The *gerunds* (дѣеприча́стія) are nothing but *verbal adverbs* formed from active or neuter participles. They have two terminations in each of the two tenses, viz: *a*) in the *present*, я or (after a hissing letter) а, and ючи or учу, e. g. дѣлая́ and дѣлая́чи, *in doing*; дыша́ and дышучи, *in breathing*; неся́ and несучи, *in bearing*; *b*) in the *preterit*, въ and вши; e. g. дѣлавъ́ and дѣлавши́, *after having done*; проси́въ and проси́вши, *having prayed*, remarking however that verbs which have not the letter л in the preterit, have only the termination ши, e. g. уме́рши, *being dead*; поту́хши, *being*



*extinguished.* The same is the case with the pronominal verbs; e. g. учившись, *after having learned*; возвратившись, *having returned*.

The full terminations of the gerunds *ючи* and *вши* are more commonly employed in familiar language, while the apocopated termination *я* and *съ* are more usual in the written tongue.

### EXERCISES ON THE ADVERBS AND THE GERUNDS.

Come here, for I live here. Where is your brother? Adverbs.

Пойти сюда, ибо я жить здесь. Где ваш брат?

He is not at home. Where did he go yesterday evening? Онъ нѣтъ дома. Куда онъ поѣхать вчера вечеромъ?

Thou judgest wisely, and thy brother judges more wisely. I Ты судить умно, а твой брат . Я

walk quick, and thou walkest quicker. You speak Russian ходить шибко, а ты . Ты говорить по-русски

purely, and your sister speaks it more purely. To-morrow чисто, а вашъ сестрица . Завтра

we shall go very far, and in a year we shall go still я поѣхать очень далеко, а чрезъ (acc.) годъ еще

further. Thou singest well, but she sings better. I beg . Ты пѣть хорошо, но онъ . Я просить

you very earnestly. I thank you very humbly.

ты убедительно. Я благодарить ты покорно.

While walking on the bank of the river, I enjoy Gerunds.

Гулять на (prep.) берегъ рѣки, я наслаждаться

the freshness of the evening. While pitying the unfortunate, (instr.) прохлада вечеръ. Жалѣть о (prep.) несчастный,

try to aid them. I instruct you, because I wish стараться помогать онъ. Я учить ты, желать

you well, and because I hope, that you will make progress  
ты (*gen.*) добръ, и надѣяться, что ты успѣвать

in the sciences. When thou dost not know how to do  
въ (*prep.*) наука. Не уметь дѣлать (*gen.*)

a thing, ask advice without blushing. Do right,  
что нибудь, просить (*gen.*) совѣтъ, не краснѣть. Дѣлать добръ,

without fearing any man. One must not eat when  
не бояться (*gen.*) никто. Должно не ѣсть

lying down. In serving our country, and dying for  
лежать. Служить (*dat.*) отечество, и умирать за (*acc.*)

it, we do our duty. Having received your letter, and  
онъ, я исполнять свой долгъ. Получить вашъ письмо, и

having learned what you want, I have answered imme-  
узнать (*gen.*) что ты желать, я отвѣчать немѣ-

diately. After having dined, stop at home. Having  
дленно. Отобѣдать, оставаться дома. Напи-

written your letter, I placed it in an envelope, and  
сать письмо, положить въ (*acc.*) конвертъ, и

sealed it, put it in the post. Having returned  
запечатать, отдавать онъ на (*acc.*) почта. Прийти

home, I set about writing. After being married, he repaired  
домой, я съѣсть писать. Жениться, онъ поѣхать

to the country. Having remained an hour with him,  
въ (*acc.*) деревня. Просидѣть (*acc.*) часъ у (*gen.*) онъ,

I returned home; after undressing myself and going to bed,  
я пойти домой; раздѣваться и лечь,

I fell asleep immediately.

я уснуть скоро.

## THE PREPOSITION.

75.—The *prepositions* (предлоги) of the Russian language are *simple* (безъ, на, по) or *compound* (изъ-за, изъ-подъ); the following is a general list of them:

Division of  
the prepo-  
sitions.

Безъ (безо), without.	Отъ (ото), from; since; out of.
Вз- or воз- (взо), up, <i>sus</i> .	По (па-), about; until; after.
Въ (во), in, into, to, at.	Подъ (подо-), under, underneath.
Вы-, out, without, <i>ex</i> .	Пра-, ( <i>indicating a removed relationship</i> ; пра́дѣтъ, <i>great grand-father</i> ).
Для, for.	Пре- or пере-, beyond, <i>trans</i> .; <i>re</i> .
До, as far as, until.	Предъ or передъ (предо), before.
За, behind; after; for.	При, near; in the time of.
Изъ (изо), from.	Про, of, about.
Изъ-за, from behind.	Ра́ди, for the sake of.
Изъ-подъ, from under.	Раз- or раз- (разо), apart, <i>se</i> .
Къ (ко), to, towards; for.	Сквозъ, through.
На, on; against.	Съ (со, съ-), since; about; with.
Надъ (надо), upon, over.	У, at; by, near. [ <i>ing</i> ].
Низ- (низо-), down, <i>de</i> .	Чрезъ or че́резъ, through; dur-
О or объ (обо), of; round; against.	

The following adverbs also belong to the class of prepositions:

Близъ, near.	О́коло, round; about.
Вдоль, along.	О́крестъ, around.
Вмѣсто, instead of.	Опрі́чь, except, excepting.
Внутрь and внутрі́, within.	Повѣрхъ, upon, above.
Внѣ, out of, without.	Подо́бъ, beside.
Возлѣ, beside.	Позади́ and поза́дь, behind.
Вопреки́, against, in spite of.	Послѣ́, after.
Кро́мъ, besides, except.	Пре́жде, before.
Ме́жду or ме́жъ, between, among.	Проти́въ or проти́ву, against.
Мимо, past, by.	Сверхъ, above; besides.
Назадѣ́, behind.	Сза́ди or сзади́, from behind.
Насупроти́въ, opposite.	Среди́ and сре́дь, in the middle.

Certain adverbs, formed from qualifying adjectives, are also used as prepositions; e. g. *относительно*, *in reference to*; *касательно*, *concerning*. The same is the case with certain gerunds, as: *исключая*, *excepting*; *не смотря на*, *not withstanding*, and also some nouns in different cases, as: *въ разсужденіи*, *in consideration of*; *посредствомъ*, *by means of*, &c.

76—The prepositions in every language have a twofold use. In the first place they are used, as prefixes, in the formation of the different parts of speech, of which they become an integral part; e. g. *безуміе*, *absurdity*; *взглядъ*, *look*, *западъ*, *the west*; *обольщать*, *to seduce*; *насынокъ*, *the son-in-law*; *правнукъ*, *the great-grand-son*; *сумерки*, *twilight*; *чрезвычайный*, *extraordinary*, &c. Secondly, as particles of speech, they are placed before nouns and pronouns to indicate the relations of the objects; e. g. *человѣкъ безъ ума*, *a man without talent*; *про́сьба до судьи*, *a request to the judge*; *письмо къ другу*, *a letter to a friend*; *сказка о лисѣ*, *the tale of the fox*, &c.

These examples show that some prepositions are used conjointly and separately, while others of them can only be employed in one of these ways. Such as are only used *separately*, are: *для*, *къ* (*ко*), *ради*, *сквозь*, *изъ-за* and *изъ-подъ*. Such as are only used *conjointly*, are: *въ* (*воз*, *взо*), *вы*, *низъ* (*низо*), *на*, *пра*, *пре* (*пере*), *разъ* (*роз*, *разо*) and *съ*, and for this reason are called *inseparable* prepositions. All the other prepositions may be used both conjointly and separately.

77.—The separable prepositions require the complementary word to be put in a certain case. Thus: Government  
of the pre-  
positions.

Безъ, для, до, изъ, изъ-за, изъ-подъ, отъ, ради and у, as well as almost all the adverbs used prepositionally, require the *genitive*.

Къ and the adverb вопреки require the *dative*.

Про, сквозь and чрезъ govern the *accusative*.

Надъ requires the *instrumental*, as does also the adverb между or межъ, though used occasionally with the *genitive*.

При governs the *prepositional*.

За, подъ and предъ require the *accusative*, when they indicate motion towards an object, and the *instrumental* when they design repose.

Въ, на and о or объ govern the *accusative*, when they indicate a change of place, and the *prepositional*, when there is no motion indicated from one place to another.

Съ governs the *genitive*, the *accusative* and the *instrumental*. With the *genitive* it means *from*, *since*; with the *accusative*, *as*, *about*, *of the size of*, and with the *instrumental*, *with*.

По requires the *dative*, the *accusative* and the *prepositional*. With the *dative* it signifies *about*; with the *accusative*, *as far as*, and with the *prepositional*, *after*.

#### EXERCISES ON THE PREPOSITIONS.

Without hope it is impossible to live in the world. From  
Безъ надежда нельзя жить въ светъ. Отъ  
the river to the forest there are two versts. Of what are you  
рѣкѣ до лѣсъ (есть) два верста. О что ты

talking? We labour for the public good. Between the  
говорить? Я трудиться для общій блага. Между

house and the garden there is a large court with stables.  
домъ и садъ (есть) пространный дворъ съ конюшня.

For God's sake do not grieve. The love of the sovereign  
Ради Бога не унывать. Любѣвь къ государь

and of one's native land. He lives at his uncle. The soldier  
и отѣчество. Онъ жить у своей дядя. Солдатъ

started from behind the bush. The ray of the sun passes  
выскочить изъ-за кустъ. Лучъ солнечный проникать  
through the water. This man is at death's door.  
сквозь вода. Этотъ человекъ (есть) при смерть.

The bird flies under the clouds. I have put the book under  
Птица летать подъ облако. Я положить книга подъ  
the table. Sit down to table and remain at table. My  
столъ. Садиться за столъ и сидѣть за столъ. Мой

brother starts for Moscow, because his wife lives at  
братъ ѣхать въ Москвѣ, потому что онъ женѣ жить въ

Moscow. The eagle is perched on the tree. This glass  
Москвѣ. Орѣлъ сидѣть на дерево. Этотъ рюмка

has been broken into several pieces. I am angry with my  
разбиваться на мелкій часть. Я досадовать на мой

brother for his laziness. Never mind the affairs of others.  
братъ за онъ лѣность. Не заботиться о дѣло чужой.

My friend has wounded himself against the corner of the table.  
Мой другъ ушибаться объ уголъ столъ.

The water runs from the roof. Here are trees with leaves,  
Вода течь съ кровля. Вотъ дерево съ листь,

but without blossoms. This dog will be of the size of  
но безъ цвѣтъ. Этотъ собака быть съ

a cow. The children run about the court and about the  
корова. Дитя бѣгать по дворъ и по

garden. We worked from the first to the fifth of August.  
садъ. Я рабѣтать отъ пѣрвый по пѣтый числѣ А'вгустъ.

He wears mourning for his brother.  
Онъ носить трауръ по свой братъ.

## THE CONJUNCTION.

78.—The following is a general list of the Russian *conjunctions* (союзы).

А, and; but.	Не только . . . но, и, not only
Буде, if, provided.	. . . . . but even.
Будто, будто бы, that, as if.	Нежели, than.
Впрочемъ, as for the rest.	Ни, ниже, neither, nor; not
Да, and, but; let.	Но, but. [even.
Дабы, that, in order that.	Однако, however.
Для того что, because.	Посему, then.
Ежели and если, if, in case,	Потому что, because.
when.	Правда, it is true.
Же or жъ, then, also.	Пускай or пусть, let.
И, and; also, too.	Сколь ни, whatever.
Ибо, because.	Слѣдовательно, consequently,
Или or иль, or.	То, then. [then.
И такъ, therefore.	Того ради, therefore.
Какъ, as, when.	Только and то́кмо, only, merely.
Какъ-то, for instance.	Хотя, though, although.
Когда, when, whenever.	Хотя бы, even though.
Ли or ль ( <i>interrogative</i> ); if,	Что, that.
whether.	Чтобы or чтобы, that, in order
Либо, either, or.	that.
Лишь, just, as soon as.	Чѣмъ, than.

There are other parts of speech which perform the office of conjunctions; such are the relative pronouns: кто, что, который, кой, *who, which*; чей, *whose*; какой, *which*; the interrogative adverbs: гдѣ, куда, *where*; отку́да, *whence*; доко́ль, *how long*; ско́лько, сколь, *how much*; and others: такъ,

*thus; пока, as much as; тѣмъ . . . чѣмъ, so much the more . . . that; чѣмъ . . . тѣмъ, the more . . . the more; частью, in part, &c.*

#### EXERCISES ON THE CONJUNCTIONS.

My uncle was born and lived at Moscow, and not at Tver.

Мой дѣдя родиться и жить, въ Москвѣ, а не въ Тверь.

Do you know that our tutor is indisposed? If you do

Знать ли что нашъ учитель нездоровый? Ежели ты

not come I shall be angry. Ask him if he

не прѣзжать, то я осердиться. Спросить у онъ, ли онъ

will come, or if he has the intention to stop at home. Не

хотѣть ѣхать, или вознамѣриться оставаться дома. Онъ

distresses himself more about his brother than about his sister.

забѣдниться болѣе о братъ, нежели о сестра.

It is more agreeable to do good to others, than to receive

Пріятно дѣлать добръ другой, чѣмъ получать

benefits one's self. Let him come; let them go.

благодѣланіе самъ. Пусть онъ прійти; пускай онъ ѣхать.

Do not let the sun find you on your bed. Long live

Не да солнце заставать ты на ложѣ. Да здравствовать

the Tzar. The more thou learnest diligently, the more study will

Царь. Чѣмъ ты учишься прилежно, тѣмъ ученіе быть

be easy to thee.

лёгкій для ты.

#### THE INTERJECTION.

79.—The principal *interjections* (междомѣтія) of the Russian language are the following: урѣ! ра! expressing *joy*; ахъ! охъ! увы! ахтѣ! expressive of *pain*; ай! ухъ! ой! indicate *fear*; тѣу! indicates *aversion*; уфъ! expresses *fatigue*; ну! нѣже! are used to *encourage*; стѣ! тсѣ! to impose *silence*; эй! реи! to *call*.



## SECOND PART

## SYNTAX.

80.—*Syntax*, which treats of the union of the different elements of speech, and of the order in which those different elements ought to be arranged, is divided into three parts: 1) the *concord* of words (согласованіе), or the syntax of agreement, which teaches how to express the union existing between the words forming the proposition; 2) the *dependence* of words (управлѣніе), or the syntax of government, which teaches the manner of indicating the relation existing between a term and its antecedent; and 3) the *construction* of words (размѣщеніе), or the place to be assigned to the single words in the proposition, and to the propositions in the period.

Division of  
Syntax.

## CONCORD OF WORDS.

81.—The following are the rules of the concord of words in the Russian language:

1. The *subject* (подлежащее), *attribute* (сказуемое) and *copula* (связка) must agree in gender, number and person; e. g. Божъ есть всемогущъ, *God is almighty*; науки (суть) полезны, *the sciences are useful*; Москва была славна, *Moscow has been celebrated*; Азія будетъ спокойна, *Asia will be tranquil*; солнце взошло, *the sun has risen*. — When the attribute is a noun, it retains its gender and number; as: орёлъ есть хищная птица, *the eagle*

*is a bird of prey*; but the movable nouns agree with the subject; as: *лунá есть спътница земли, the moon is the satellite of the earth.*

To this rule there are the following exceptions: 1) The personal pronoun of the 2d person, with its determinatives, as also the verb and the attribute when an adjective is used, from politeness, in the *plural* instead of the singular; but when the attribute is a noun, it remains in the singular; e. g. *вы сами, другъ мой, нездоровы, you yourself, my friend, are indisposed; будьте свидѣтелями, be a witness.* — 2) The verb *быть*, in the sense of *exist*, though the subject be plural, remains in the *singular* in the 3d person of the present; but in the preterit and future it agrees in number with its subject; e. g. *у него есть деньги, he has money; у него были деньги, he had money; у него будутъ деньги, he will have money.* — 2) In the case of nouns indicating a title, the verb and the attribute agree in gender with the sex of the person who bears the title; as: *Его Величество (Король) нездоровъ, His Majesty (the King) is indisposed; Ея Сіятельство (Графиня) была здѣсь, Her Excellency (the Countess) has been here; Его Свѣтлость (Князь) прогуливался, His Highness (the Prince) has taken a walk.*

2. Determinative words agree with the noun they determine, in *gender, number and case*; e. g. *Великій Петръ преобразовалъ обширную Россію, Peter the Great has regenerated the vast Russian empire.* If the determinative is a noun, it only agrees in *case*; e. g. *слёзы, утѣшеніе несчастныхъ, у него иссякли, tears, the consolation of the unhappy, were dried up within him.*

3. Two or more subjects in the singular require the verb and the attribute in the *plural*; e. g. *лѣньность и прѣздность (суть) вредны, laziness and inactivity are pernicious.* If the two nouns in the singular are united by an alternative conjunction,

the verb and the attribute must be in the *singular*; e. g. зима́ или весна́ тебѣ́ прі́ятна? *is it winter or spring that is agreeable to thee?*

4. The infinitive, when it performs the office of subject, requires the verb and the attribute to be put in the *neuter singular*; this is also the case with the adverbs много́, *much*; ма́ло, *little*; ско́лько, *how much*; нѣско́лько, *some*; e. g. уми́рать за оте́чество (есть) сла́вно и прі́ятно, *it is noble and pleasant to die for one's country*; ско́лько пришло́ семе́йствъ, *how many families have arrived?*

5. When two nouns, the one appellative and the other proper, both relating to the same object, differ in number or gender, the adjective or verb agrees with the *appellative* noun; e. g. дре́вній го́родъ Ѡ́ивы, *the ancient city of Thebes*; сла́вная рѣ́ка Дуна́й, *the celebrated river Danube*. When there are two nouns of different genders, the adjective agrees with the *masculine*; e. g. сла́вные ца́ри и ца́рицы, *the celebrated kings and queens*. In the verbs the first person has the priority over the two others, and the second over the third; as: ты и я гу́ляемъ вме́стѣ, *thou and I walk together*; ты и онъ не зна́ете что дѣ́лать, *thou and he know not what to do*.

6. The numerals compounded of о́динъ, *one*, require the noun in the *singular* (§ 43); e. g. двѣ́дцать о́динъ ру́бль, *twenty one rubles*; ты́сяча о́дна но́чь, *the thousand and one nights*.

7. The relative pronouns agree in *gender* and *number* with the noun to which they relate, but they take the *case* that the verb of the phrase in which

they occur, may require; e. g. я знаю дѣло, о которомъ вы говорите, *I know the affair of which you speak*. The pronoun *чей*, occurring always with a noun, must agree in every respect with that noun; e. g. тотъ, въ чьихъ рукахъ моя судьба, *he in whose hands is my destiny*.

### EXERCISES ON THE CONCORD OF WORDS.

Winter is agreeable. Men are mortal. Novgorod was  
Зима приятный. Человѣкъ смертный. Новгородъ быть  
rich. Russia is a vast empire. The Wolga is the king  
богатый. Россія быть обширный имперія. Волга быть царь  
of the rivers of Russia. My friend, you shall be satisfied.  
рѣка русскій. Мой пріятель, ты быть довольный.

We have great stores. I shall have to-morrow some  
У я быть большой запасъ. У я быть завтра  
money. Her Majesty (*the Empress*) is gone out. His  
деньги. Онъ Величество (*Императрица*) выѣхать. Онъ

Excellency (*the general*) is gone. His Imperial  
Превосходительство (*генералъ*) уѣхать. Онъ Императорскій

Highness (*the Grand-Duke*) has been satisfied. Geography  
Высочество (*Великій Князь*) быть довольный. Географія

and history are very useful branches of knowledge.  
и исторія быть весьма полезный знаніе.

It is difficult to be silent. How many children were there?  
Трудный молчать. Сколько дѣтя быть тамъ?

Moscow is celebrated; the town of Moscow is celebrated.  
Москва знаменитый; городъ

China is densely peopled; the empire of China is densely  
Китай многолюдный; государство

peopled. He has thirty one horses. The book  
 У ОНЪ БЫТЬ ТРИДЦАТЬ ОДИНЪ ЛОШАДЬ. Книга,  
 which you are reading, is very amusing. Here is  
 который ты чита́ть, очень забавный. Вотъ  
 the man by whose works we profit.  
 человекъ, (*instr.*) чей трудъ пользоваться.

## DEPENDENCE OF WORDS.

82.—For the *dependence* or government of words in Russian the following rules are to be observed:

1. Words which, having the same root, appear in the form of substantive, adjective or adverb, as also in the form of verb, participle or gerund, require the same *cases*; e. g. вредить ближнему, *to do harm to his neighbour*; вредящій ближнему, *doing harm to his neighbour*; вредя ближнему, *in doing harm to his neighbour*; вредъ ближнему, *the harm done to his neighbour*; вредный ближнему, *prejudicial to his neighbour*; вредно ближнему, *prejudicially to his neighbour*.

2. The governing power of the verbs depends on their meaning: the same verb used in different significations requires different *cases*; e. g. говорить правду, *to speak the truth*; говорить о дѣлѣ, *to speak of an affair*; говорить языкомъ, *to speak a language*; говорить съ другомъ, *to speak with a friend*; отказать просителю, *to refuse a petitioner*; отказать въ просьбѣ, *to refuse a request*; отказать домъ, *to bequeath a house*; отказать отъ должности, *to deprive of an office*.

3. The prepositions communicate to the verbs to which they are joined a double quality. In the first place they express simply the commencement of the action, its duration and its completion; as: игралъ на флѣйтѣ, *he played on the flute*; заигралъ на флѣйтѣ, *he began to play on the flute*; поигравъ на флѣйтѣ, занялся онъ чтеніемъ, *after having played a little on the flute, he busied himself with reading*; вчера сыгралъ на флѣйтѣ претрудное сочиненіе, *yesterday he played on the flute a very difficult composition*; онъ доигралъ на флѣйтѣ начатое на скрипкѣ,

he finished playing on the flute what he had begun on the violin; *отыграть на флётѣ въ полночь*, he ceased playing on the flute at midnight. Secondly the preposition gives to the verb another

meaning; e. g. *писать писемѣ*, to write a letter; *восписать хвалѣ*, to confer praises upon; *вписать въ книгу*, to inscribe in the book; *выписать изъ книги*, to extract from a book; *записать въ службу*, to enter on the service; *написать адресъ*, to write an address; *отписать къ другу*, to inform a friend; *переписать набѣлю*, to make a fair copy; *приписать строчку*, to add a line; *прописать всю службу*, to describe the whole service; *расписать комнату*, to paint a room; *списаться съ пріятелемъ*, to correspond with a friend. The prepositional verbs of the first mentioned class require after them the same *preposition* and the same *case* as in the simple form, while those of the second category, in which the addition of a preposition modifies the sense, take after them the preposition with which they are formed, or a corresponding one, as is seen below.

Verbs formed with the preposition require after them the preposition	воз- и- в-зъ,	на; e. g. . .	взойти на гору, to ascend the mountain.
	в- и- во.	въ; . . .	вступать въ домъ, to enter in the house.
	вы, . .	изъ; . .	выйти изъ лѣсу, to issue from the forest.
	до, . .	до; . .	добѣгать до города, to go as far as the town.
	за, . .	за; . .	закінуть за спину, to throw behind one's self.
	из, . .	изъ; . .	извлечь изъ книги, to extract from a book.
	на, . .	на; . .	навьючить на лошадь, to place upon a horse.
	над, . .	надъ; . .	надсматривать надъ дѣтьми, to watch over the children.
	низ, . .	съ; . .	низлетѣть съ кровли, to fly down from the roof.
	от, . .	отъ; . .	оторвать отъ работы, to tear from labour.
	пере, . .	чрезъ; . .	перескочить чрезъ ровъ, to leap across a ditch.
	под, . .	подъ; . .	подложить подъ голову, to put under his head.
	пред, . .	предъ; . .	предстать предъ судей, to present himself before the judges.
	при, . .	къ; . .	прійти къ другу, to come to a friend.
	про, . .	сквозъ; . .	пройти сквозъ огонь, to pass through the fire.
e or co,	произ, . .	отъ; . .	произойти отъ болѣзни, to arise from a disease.
	раз, . .	на; . .	разрѣзать на части, to cut into pieces.
e or co,	с, . .	съ; . .	скінуть съ себя, to throw off one's self.

83.—We now give the application of these rules in every case, with the exceptions thereto.

Nominative. In the *nominative* are put: 1) The subject, or the principal member of the proposition; as: *солнце свѣтитъ*, the sun shines; *море шумитъ*, the sea

roars. (The subject with a negative verb is sometimes put in the *genitive*; see below.)—2) The attribute, united to the subject by means of the verb *есть*, *былъ* or *буду*, when it expresses a permanent quality of the subject; as: орёлъ есть птица, *the eagle is a bird*; Адамъ былъ человекомъ, *Adam was a man*. The adjective in this occasion is used in the apocopated termination; as: Богъ есть всемогущъ, *God is almighty*; Славяне были храбры, *the Slavonians were brave*. If the attribute does not express some permanent quality of the subject, but only a transitory one and of short duration, it is then put in the *instrumental*; as: мой братъ былъ въ то время кадетомъ, *my brother was at that time a cadet*; онъ скоро будетъ генераломъ, *he will soon be a general*. This exception however occurs only with the preterit and the future, never with the present.

In the *vocative* is put the name or denomination Vocative. of the person addressed; e. g. Бóже, спаси Царя! *God, save the Tsar!* Господи, помилуй меня! *Lord, have mercy upon me!*

The *accusative* is used: 1) After the active verbs; Accusative. as: птица пьётъ воду, *the bird drinks the water*; я погасилъ свѣчѣ, *I have put out the candle*; мой сосѣдъ купилъ домъ, *my neighbour has bought a house*. The verbal nouns, formed from these verbs, require the *genitive*; as: питье воды, *the drinking of the water*; погашеніе свѣчѣ, *the putting out of the candle*; покупка дома, *the purchase of a house*. —2) To indicate the duration of an action for a given time or over a given distance; as: я шёлъ

всю ночь, *I have written the whole night*; онъ проѣхалъ версту, *he has run a verst*.—3) After the prepositions въ, на, за, подъ, предъ, про, сквозь, чрезъ, о or объ, no and съ (§ 77).

**Dative.** The *dative* is used: 1) With the accusative, to indicate the person to whose gain or loss the action is performed; e. g. ты подалъ милостыню бѣдному, *thou hast given alms to the poor man*.—2) After the verbs formed with the prepositions предъ and со (in a sense of reciprocity), or with the adverbs б.ідо, противъ and прѣко; as: осень предшествуетъ зимѣ, *autumn precedes winter*; не прекословь старшимъ, *do not contradict the aged*.—3) After the verbs expressing command or prohibition, pleasure or grief, compliance or opposition, assistance or obstacle; e. g. мы подражаемъ древнимъ, *we imitate the ancients*; не льсти богатымъ, *do not flatter the rich*; служи усердно Государю, *serve the sovereign with zeal*. The verbal nouns formed from these verbs also require the dative; as: подражаніе древнимъ, *the imitation of the ancients*; лесть богатымъ, *flattery to the rich*.—4) After such verbs as are used in the infinitive instead of the future; as: быть бѣдѣ, *there will be a misfortune*; не видать намъ ясныхъ дней, *we shall see no more fine days*.—5) With the impersonal verbs; as: мнѣ хочется ѣсть, *I want to eat*; вамъ нездоровится, *you are indisposed*.—6) With such adjectives and adverbs as are derived from the above mentioned verbs, or which express advantage or detriment, utility or uselessness, pleasure or dislike; e. g. приятный слуху, *agreeable to the ear*; жить при-



лично своему состоянию, *to live suitably to one's condition.*—7) After the prepositions *кз* and *но*, and the adverb *вопреки* (§ 77).

The *instrumental* is used: 1) With the active, neuter, pronominal and passive verbs, *a*) to designate the instrument, the means by which the action is performed; as: онъ берётъ книгу руками, *he takes the book with the hands*; я моюсь водою, *I wash myself with water*; книга написана моимъ учителемъ, *the book has been written by my master*; б) to designate the name, surname or quality given to an object; as: его зовутъ Иваномъ, *they call him John*; тебя почитаютъ умнымъ, *you are considered intelligent*. Some active verbs expressing motion, which usually govern the accusative, are also found with the instrumental; as: бросать камень and бросать камнемъ, *to throw a stone*; двигать сердца and сердцами, *to move the hearts.*—2) With the verb *быть* and *быва́ть*, to designate a quality; as: онъ хочетъ быть любимымъ, *he desires to be loved*; не быва́ть тебѣ воиномъ, *thou wilt not be a warrior*. (See above the nominative.)—3) After such verbs as indicate contempt, indignation, esteem, possession, sacrifice, &c.; as: пренебрегать опасностью, *to despise danger*; владѣть имѣниемъ, *to possess a property*; жертвовать собою, *to sacrifice one's self*. The verbal nouns formed from such verbs also require the instrumental; as: пренебреженіе опасностью, *the contempt of danger*; владѣніе имѣниемъ, *the possession of a property.*—4) To designate that part of an object which is distinguished by some particular quality; as: лицомъ

бѣлъ, *white in the face*; широкъ плечами, *broad in the shoulders*.—5) To indicate the road an object takes; and also to designate the seasons and the parts of the day; as: плыть моремъ, *to go by sea*; весною сѣютъ, *one sows in spring*; ночью спятъ, *one sleeps at night*.—6) After the prepositions за, надъ, подъ, предъ, съ, and the adverb между or межъ (§ 77).

Genitive. The *genitive* is used: 1) With nouns to indicate that one object is the property of another, and also its origin, &c.; as: хозяинъ дома, *the master of the house*; домъ сосѣда, *the house of the neighbour*; сынъ солдата, *the son of a soldier*. The complementary noun in such occasions may be converted into a possessive adjective; as: домовый хозяинъ, сосѣдний домъ, солдатскій сынъ. The dative may sometimes be substituted for this genitive; as: другъ брату, *the friend of the brother*; цѣна мѣстамъ, *the price of the places*. A noun with a qualifying adjective indicates in the genitive the quality of the object in a higher degree; as: чай лучшаго сорта, *a tea of superior quality*; человекъ строгихъ правилъ, *a man of rigid principles*.—2) With the verbal nouns, formed from active verbs governing the accusative; e. g. чтѣнiе книги, *the reading of a book*; знанiе дѣла, *the knowledge of an affair*.—3) To designate number, weight, measure, and in general after adverbs of quantity; as: пудъ сѣна, *a food of hay*; аршинъ сукна, *an ell of cloth*; нѣсколько книгъ, *some books*.—4) To designate the years, the months and the day of the month; as: шестого января тысяча восемьсотъ

четырнадцатого года, *January 6th 1814.*—5) After active verbs preceded by the negative adverb *не*, and with the impersonal negative verbs *нѣтъ, не стало, не слышно, не имѣется*, and others indicating privation; e. g. *не люблю невѣжды, I do not like the ignorant; не вижу пользы, I do not see the advantage; у насъ нѣтъ хлеба, we have no bread; когда меня не будетъ, when I shall be no more; не видно переменъ, one sees no change.*—

6) With the active verbs, when the action extends only to a part of the object, or lasts only a limited time; e. g. *принеси воды, bring me some water; дай мнѣ перо, give me your pen for a little while.*

The same is the case with some verbs formed with the prepositions *на* and *по*, as: *наудить рыбы, to catch some fish; покосить травы, to mow some grass.*—7) With such active and pronominal verbs as express desire, expectation, disobedience, fear, privation, &c.; e. g. *желаемъ здѣствія, we desire health; онъ ждетъ разсвѣта, he awaits daybreak; бояться дневнаго свѣта, to fear the light of day; держаться правды чести, to keep to principles of honour.*

The verbal nouns formed from these verbs also require the genitive; as: *желаніе славы, the desire of glory; лишеніе имѣнія, the loss of a property.*—8) After the adjectives *достойный, worthy; полный, full; чуждый, a stranger to; and the adverb жаль, it is a pity;*

e. g. *я чуждъ сего мнѣнія, I am a stranger to this opinion; жаль ему брата, he is sorry for his brother.*—9) After adjectives and adverbs in the comparative, when not followed by a conjunction; e. g. *сокровища драгоцѣннѣйшія*

зѳлота, *treasures more precious than gold*; слонѳ больше верблюда, *the elephant is larger than the camel*; онѳ жилѳ долѳе всѳхѳ, *he has lived longer than all.*—10) After the prepositions безѳ, для, до, изѳ, изѳ-за, изѳ-подѳ, отѳ, ради, съ and у, as also after most of the adverbs used as prepositions (§ 77), remarking that the prepositions для and ради are sometimes placed after their complement; as: для Бѳга and Бѳга для, *for God's sake*; ради чѳсти and чѳсти ради, *for honour*.

Lastly the *genitive* is used with the numerals. See the particular rules relative to the numerals § 43.

Preposi-  
tional.

The *prepositional* case is only used with the prepositions въ, на, о or обѳ, no and при (§ 77).

#### EXERCISES ON THE DEPENDENCE OF WORDS.

Nominative. Water is an element. Alexander of Macedon was a great  
Вода быть стихія. Александръ Македонскій быть великій

captain. The Tatars were ferocious. My grand-father  
полковѳдецъ. Татаринѳ быть свирѳпый. Мой дѳдѳ

was an officer; my grand-father was then an officer. It is said  
быть офицеръ; тогда . Говорить

that the comets have been or will be once planets.  
что комѳта быть или быть ещѳ планѳта.

Accusative. The rain refreshes the earth. Rogues hate honest  
Дождѳ освѳжать землѳ. Злодѳи ненавидѳть чѳстный

men. The storm which devastated our fields, has ruined  
люди. Бѳря, опустѳшать нашѳ полѳ, разорѳть

many peasants. Speak always the truth. My brother has  
многіѳ поселянинѳ. Говорить всегдѳ правѳа. Мой братѳ быть

been sick all winter. I have been a whole verst on horseback.  
 больно́й весь зима́. Я ѣхалъ цѣлый верста́ верхомъ.

Thou art praised for thy assiduity. He struck himself against  
 Ты хвалить за прилежаніе. Онъ ударяться объ  
 the wall. We are in the water up to the neck. The son  
 стѣна. Я сидѣть въ вода́ по шея. Сынъ

is the size of the father, and the daughter almost the size of  
 ростъ съ отецъ, и дочь почти́ съ  
 the mother.

мать.

The miser prefers money to glory, and the warrior Dative.

Скупѣцъ предпочитатъ деньга́ слава, и вои́нъ

prefers glory to money. The lightning precedes the  
 слава́ деньга́. Мо́лнія́ предше́ствовать

thunder. I admire your patience. Do these pictures  
 громъ. Дивитъсѣ вашѣ терпѣніе. Э́тотъ карти́на

please you? Do not avenge thyself on thy enemy,  
 нравитъсѣ ли ты? Не мститъ твой непріятель,

and do good to him who has offended thee. There will  
 и дѣлать добро́ обижать ты. Быть

be a prodigy. Bitter tears will be shed. The child wishes  
 чу́до. Горькій слеза́ литься. Ребе́нокъ хотѣться

to drink. It is not proper for a strong man to offend  
 пить. Не приличнѣй сильнѣй чело́вѣкъ обижать

the weak. The imitation of Jesus Christ. The love of  
 сла́бый. Подража́ніе Иису́съ Христо́съ. Любо́вь къ

virtue and the hatred of vice.

добродѣтель и ненави́сть къ поро́къ.

I see with the eyes, I touch with the hands, I hear with Instru-  
 Видѣть глаза́, осяза́ть рука́, слы́шать mental.

the ears, I smell with the nose, I taste with the tongue.

ухо́, обоня́ть носъ, вкуша́ть язы́къ.

Ismail was taken by Souvorof, and Otchakow by Potemkin.  
Измайлъ взятъ Суворовъ, и Очаковъ Потёмкинъ.

Every body calls these officers heroes. The patient moves  
Весь называть этотъ офицеръ герой. Большой шевелить  
scarcely the lips. I detest fraud and falsehood. Here  
едва губа. Гнушаться обманъ и ложь. Здесь

one breathes a pure air. The sacrifice of one's life for  
дышать чистый воздухъ. Пожертвованіе жизнь за  
his sovereign and country. He is kind in heart, but weak  
Государь и отечество. Онъ добрый сердце, но слабый

in head. One must rise in the morning, work during  
головѣ. Надобно вставать утро, работать

the day, rest in the evening and sleep during the night.  
день, отдыхать вечеръ, и спать ночь.

Reconcile my friend with his uncle. I congratulate you on  
Помирить мой другъ съ онъ дядя. Поздравлять ты съ  
your success.  
вашъ успѣхъ.

Genitive. The son of my faithful friend departed yesterday. Quick-  
Сынъ мой искренній другъ уѣзжать вчера. Большой

witted children are often delicate. There has been made  
умъ дитя бывать нерѣдко хилый. Составлять

a list of the officers of our division. The baking of bread.  
списокъ офицеръ нашъ дивизія. Печеніе хлѣбъ.

I have bought a pound of tea and a cord of wood. Such  
Я купить фунтъ чай и сажень дровѣ. Столько  
labour and pains have been lost uselessly. The Russians  
трудъ и забота пропадать по-пустому. Русскій

took Paris March 18th 1814. I do not eat bread, but  
брать Парижъ мартъ 18 1814. Я не есть хлѣбъ, но  
I drink water. I eat the bread, but I do not drink the water.  
пить вода. Я есть хлѣбъ, но не пить вода.

I have received neither letter nor packet. In this letter there  
 Я получа́ть не ни пи́сьмо, ни посылка. Вэ́тот пи́сьмо нѣтъ  
 is not a fault. Procure me money. The warriors wish  
 ни оди́нъ оши́бка. Достава́ть я де́ньги. Вои́нъ жела́тъ  
 for the battle and seek glory. The ambitious man thirsts for  
 бо́йтва и иска́тъ сла́ва. Славолю́бецъ жа́ждать  
 honours. Thou desirest riches, and thou fearest labour.  
 по́честъ. Ты хоте́тъ бога́тство, и бо́яться тру́дъ.  
 The barrel is full of wine. A worthy man is a stranger to hatred  
 Бо́чка по́лный ви́но. До́брый че́ловѣкъ чу́ждый зло́ба  
 and envy. Gold is dearer than silver; lead is heavier  
 и за́вистъ. Зо́лото доро́гой серебро́; сви́нецъ тяжѣ́лый  
 than iron. He asks alms for Christ's sake. Rest is  
 желе́зо. Онъ проси́тъ ми́лостыня Христо́съ ра́ди. О́тдыхъ  
 agreeable after labour. Along this shore runs a chain  
 прі́ятный послѣ́ рабо́та. Вдо́ль этотъ бе́регъ тяну́тся цѣ́пь  
 of mountains. The wolves prowl round the villages.  
 го́ра. Во́лкъ броди́тъ око́ло дере́вня.

My brother preserves his presence of mind in all the Preposi-  
 Мой бра́тъ храни́тъ прису́тствіе ду́хъ при́ весь tional.  
 troubles of life. This town is built on the precipitous  
 непрі́ятность въ жи́знь. Сей го́родъ постро́енъ на круто́й  
 bank of a rapid river. A church with five cupolas. He  
 бе́регъ бы́стрый рѣ́ка. Це́рковь о́ пять гла́ва. Онъ  
 weeps over his father.  
 пла́кать по́ сво́й о́тець.

#### THE FAIRY. Волше́бница.

The differ-  
ent rules of  
Syntax.

A widow had two daughters: the elder resembled  
 Оди́нъ вдова́ имѣ́тъ два́ дочь: ста́рый бы́ть похо́жий на  
 her mother both in face and temper, that is to say, she was  
 сво́й ма́ть и ли́це и нра́въ, то е́сть, онъ бы́ть

as ugly and as malicious as her mother. Nobody такъ же дурной и такъ же злой, какъ онъ мать. Никто loved them; every one avoided them. The younger was не любить онъ; весь бѣгать отъ онъ. Мѣлый же быть beautiful and good. Every one loved her. But her прекрасный и добродушный. Весь любить онъ. Но онъ malicious mother and her wicked sister detested her; злой мать и злой сестра ненавидѣть онъ; they scolded her without ceasing; she alone was obliged бранить безпрестанно; онъ одинъ быть должный to work in the house, to heat the stove, to sweep the rooms, рабѣтатъ въ домъ, топѣть печь, мѣсти горница, to cook. The poor child wept from morning till стрѣпатъ въ кѣхня. Бѣдняжка плакать съ утро до night, but she was not lazy at her work; she was вѣчеръ, но онъ не лѣниться рабѣтатъ; быть obedient, patient, and all that was in vain, for послушный, терпѣливый, и весь этотъ быть напрасный, ибо she could in no way satisfy her wicked mother and мѣтъ не ничтѣ угождѣтъ на свой злой мать и на her wicked sister. свой злой сестра.

Every day this poor girl was forced to go with Ежедневно этотъ бѣдный дѣвушка быть должный ходѣтъ съ a large pitcher to fetch water in a neighbouring wood, большой кувшинъ за вода въ ближній рѣща, where there was a clear spring. One day she въ который находится чистый источникъ. Однажды онъ had gone according to custom to this spring. The day пойти по обыкновеніе къ этотъ источникъ. День was very hot. After having filled her pitcher with water, быть очень жаркій. Наполнять кувшинъ вода,



she returned home. All at once she saw before her  
онъ возвращаться домой. Вдруг видѣть предъ себя  
an old woman. "My child!" said to her the old woman,  
старушка. «Мой дитя!» сказывать онъ старушка,  
"give me water to drink; I am wearied; I am very hot." —  
«давать я напиваться; я уставать; я (быть) жаркій.» —  
"With pleasure, good mother", said the young girl, "here  
«Съ охота, бабушка», сказывать дѣвушка, «вотъ!  
drink." And she presented the pitcher to the poor woman.  
напиваться.» И онъ подавать кувшинъ старушка.

The old woman sat down on the grass from weariness, and  
Старушка садиться на траву отъ слабость, а  
the young girl kneeled down before her, and  
молодой красавица становиться на колѣно передъ онъ, и  
held gently the pitcher, while she drank.  
поддерживать осторожно кувшинъ, пока онъ пить вода.  
"I thank thee, my dear!" said the old woman after  
«Благодарить ты, милый!» сказывать старушка,  
having drunk. "I see that thou art a good, an amiable  
напиваться. «Видѣть, что ты (есть) добрый, ласковый  
child, and I wish to reward thee for thy kindness.  
дитя, и хотѣть награждать ты за твой услужливость.  
Know then that I am a fairy, and that I took pur-  
Знать же, я волшебница, и взять на себя на-  
posely the form of an old woman to put thee to the proof.  
рочно видѣ старушка, чтобы ты испытывать.  
I am delighted that thou art so good, and this is what  
Радоваться, что ты (есть) такой добрый, и вотъ, что  
I will do for thee: every time that thou shalt pronounce  
хотѣть сдѣлать для ты: всякій разъ, что ты сказывать  
a word, there shall issue from thy mouth either a pretty  
слово, выпадать изъ у ты ротъ или прекрасный

flower, or a precious stone, or a large pearl.  
цвѣтокъ, или драгоценный камень, или большой жемчужина.

Farewell, my little friend." And the fairy disappeared.  
Прости, дружокъ.» И волшебница исчезать.

The pretty girl returned home. "Where hast  
Прекрасный дѣвушка возвращаться домой. «Гдѣ

thou been so long", asked her mother with ill  
ты быть такъ долго», спрашивать у онъ мать съ

humour? — "What hast thou been doing so long in the wood?"  
сѣраде? — «Что ты дѣлать такъ долго въ роща?»,

cried her wicked sister. — "I beg pardon! I lingered by the  
закричать злой сестра. — «Виноватый! замѣшкаться»,

way", replied the poor child, and at the same instant  
отвѣчать бѣдняжка, и въ тотъ самый минута

there issued from her pretty lips two roses, two pearls,  
скатываться изъ онъ прекрасный губа два роза, два жемчужина

and two large emeralds. "What do I see?" exclaimed  
и два большой изумрудъ. «Что я видѣть?» восклицать

the mother astonished. "These are flowers! these are precious  
мать удивлённый. «Этотъ цвѣтъ! этотъ драгоценный

stones! What has happened to thee?" — The young girl  
камень! Что случиться съ ты?» — Красавица раз-

related to her with simplicity her meeting with the fairy,  
сказывать онъ простоудшно о своей встрѣча съ волшебница

and while doing it the flowers, diamonds and pearls  
и между тотъ цвѣтъ, алмазъ и жемчугъ

issued just so from her lips. "Good!" muttered  
сыпаться такъ съ онъ губа. «Хорошій же!» проворчать

the mother; "to-morrow I will send to the wood my elder  
мать; «завтра посылать въ роща мой старый

daughter, and it will be the same with her."

дочь, и быть тотъ же съ онъ.»

And the next morning she said to her daughter:

И на друго́й у́тро онъ сказа́вать сво́й дочь:

"To-day thou shalt go to fetch water: take the pitcher; but  
«Нынче ты пойти́ за вода́: взять кувши́нъ; но  
pay attention, if thou meetest at the spring an old woman,  
смотре́ть же, е́сли встре́чатъ у исто́чникъ стару́шка,  
give her to drink, and be very civil to her."  
дава́ть онъ напива́ться, и хороше́нко приласки́ваться къ онъ.»

The wicked girl frowned, took the pitcher with ill  
Зло́й дѣвчо́нка нахму́риваться, взять кувши́нъ съ

humour; went to the wood against her will, and grumbled  
доса́да; пойти́ въ ро́ща не́хотя, и ворча́ть  
all along the road. The good old woman was already  
весь въ доро́га. Стару́шка сидѣ́ть уже́

seated near the spring. "Draw me some water, my  
у исто́чникъ. «Зачерпа́ть я вода́, мо́й

dear!" said she to the young girl; "it is hot, I wish  
ми́лый!» сказа́ть онъ дѣвчо́нка; «(есть) жа́ркій, хоте́тъ  
to drink." — "What stuff! I am not come here  
напива́ться.» — «Какъ бы не такъ! Я не при́йти сю́да за то,

to serve old vagabonds; thou wilt have to drink  
чтобы́ услу́живать ста́рый бродя́га напива́ться и

without me." — "How rude thou art!" said the old  
безъ я.» — «Како́й же гру́бый ты!» сказа́вать ста-

woman to her; "I will punish thee. From this moment with  
ру́шка онъ; «я нака́зывать ты. Съ это́тъ порá при  
each of thy words there shall issue from thy mouth either  
ка́ждый тво́й сло́во выпада́ть изъ у ты ротъ или́

a serpent or a frog." She disappeared, and the wicked  
змя́я или́ лягу́шка.» Онъ исче́заетъ, а зло́й

girl ran home after having broken her pitcher  
дѣвчо́нка побѣ́жать домо́й разби́вать сво́й кувши́нъ

from spite. "What hast thou to tell me my dear daughter?"  
 съ досада. «Что ска́зывать, мѣлый дочка?»

asked her mother, when she saw her at a distance. —  
 спрашивать мать, видѣть онъ изда́лека. —

"I have nothing to tell!" answered the daughter; and all  
 «Нѣчто ска́зывать!» отвѣчать дочь; и

at once there issued from her mouth two vipers and two  
 вдругъ выска́кивать изъ онъ ротъ два змѣя и два  
 toads. "What do I see! what horror!" cried the mother;  
 жаба. «Что я видѣть! какой страхъ!» закричать мать;

"but it is thy sister who is the cause of all that! I  
 «но твой сестра (естя) виноватый въ весь этотъ! Я  
 will make her feel it." And they ran to beat the young girl.  
 давать онъ знать.» И онъ броса́ться бить меньшей дочь.

Frightened by their threats, she went to hide herself in  
 Испуга́ться угро́за, онъ скрыва́ться въ  
 the wood, ran long without daring to look behind her,  
 ро́ща, бѣгать до́лго. не сме́ть огля́дываться,

fled very far and at last lost herself. But this  
 забѣгать далеко, и наконецъ потеря́ть доро́га. Но это́тъ  
 was for her good. The son of the king, who was  
 быть къ онъ сча́стие. Сы́нъ ца́рский, кото́рый

amusing himself at that time with hunting, was just  
 забавля́ться ту́тъ охота́, находя́ться въ то́тъ

then in the wood; he saw the young girl, who, seated  
 вре́мя въ ро́ща; уви́деть красави́ца, кото́рый, сидѣть  
 on the grass, was weeping bitterly. "What has happened to  
 на травѣ; пла́кать го́рько. «Что сдѣлаться съ  
 thee? why dost thou weep, my dear?" asked he, taking  
 ты? о что ты пла́кать, мѣлый?» спрашивать онъ, взя́ть  
 her gently by the hand. — "Alas! how can I help  
 онъ ласково за рука́. — «Богъ мой! какъ я не

weeping! My mother has driven me out of the house." She  
 плакать! Матушка выгонять я изъ домъ. Онъ  
 spoke, and the flowers and the precious stones issued from  
 говорить, а цвѣтъ и драгоценный камень сыпаться съ  
 her rosy lips, and her tears were changed into pearls.  
 розовый губа, и слеза обращаться въ жемчужина.

"What is the meaning of that?" asked the son of the king;  
 «Что значить этотъ?» спрашивать сынъ царскій;  
 "whence come these flowers, these pearls and these stones?"  
 «отъ что этотъ цвѣтъ, жемчугъ и камень?»

The poor child related to the prince what had  
 Бѣдняжка разсказывать царскій сынъ о томъ, что

happened to her. He became in love with her, and  
 случаться съ онъ. Онъ полюбить онъ, и  
 he loved her more on account of her being so good and  
 полюбить еще болѣе за то, что онъ быть такъ добрый и  
 so pretty, than on account of her flowers and precious  
 милый, нежели за онъ цвѣтъ и драгоценный  
 stones. He took her with him, presented her to the king  
 камень. Онъ взять онъ съ собой, представлять онъ царь,  
 his father, whom she pleased also, and the king  
 свой отецъ, который онъ понравиться также, и царь  
 permitted his son to marry her. Thus she became  
 позволять сынъ жениться на онъ. Такой образъ онъ сдѣлаться  
 a princess, and on the death of the king, when her husband  
 царевна, а по смерть царь, когда онъ мужъ  
 mounted the throne of his ancestors, she became queen,  
 восходить на престолъ отцовскій, царица,  
 and was a good queen. And her wicked sister, what  
 и быть добрый царица. А онъ злой сестра, что  
 happened to her? She closed her life in a miserable  
 сдѣлаться съ онъ? Онъ кончать свой жизнь жалостный

way. Her mother, whom she vexed and irritated incessantly, was forced to drive her from house: престанно, быть принуждённый выгонять онъ изъ домъ; nobody would give her an asylum, and she went to hide никто не хотѣтъ даватъ онъ пристанище, и онъ скрывать herself in the forest, where she died shortly after of vexation ся въ лѣсъ, гдѣ умирать скоро съ досада and hunger. и голодъ.

## CONSTRUCTION.

84.—The grammatical order of the words in Russian is further removed from the natural construction, and inversions are more frequent than in English, French or even German; this however causes no obscurity, in as much as the inflections of the words sufficiently indicate their relative concord or dependence. With respect to the order of the propositions in the sentence, it is nearly the same in the four languages, as is seen in the following examples.

Если гѣній и дарованія ума If genius and talents merit  
имѣютъ право на благодар- the gratitude of the nations,  
ность народовъ, то Россія Russia owes a monument to  
должна Ломоносову монумент- Lomonossov. *Karamzin.*  
томъ. *Karamzin.*

Побѣды, завоеванія и величіе The victories, the conquests  
государственное, возвысивъ and the grandeur of the empire,  
духъ народа Россійскаго, имѣли by elevating the intelligence  
счастливое дѣйствіе и на самыи of the Russian nation, had a  
языкъ его, который, будучи happy influence even on the  
управляемъ дарованіемъ и language, which, when em-

вкусомъ писателя умнаго, могъ жеть равняться нынѣ въ силѣ, красотѣ и пріятности съ лучшими языками древности и нашихъ времёнъ.

*Карамзинъ.*

employed by the talent and the taste of man of genius, can now rival in strength, beauty and delicacy the noblest tongues of ancient and modern times.

*Karamzin.*

Повелитель многихъ языковъ языкъ Россійскій не только обширностію мѣстъ, гдѣ онъ господствуетъ, но кѣпно и собственнымъ своимъ пространствомъ и доволъствіемъ великъ перёдъ всѣми въ Европѣ. Карлъ V, Римскій Императоръ, говаривалъ, что Испанскимъ языкомъ съ Богомъ, Французскимъ съ друзьями, Нѣмецкимъ съ непріятелями, Италійскимъ съ женскимъ поломъ говорить прилично. Но если бы онъ Россійскому языку былъ искусенъ, то конечно къ тому присовокупилъ бы, что имъ со всѣми оными говорить пристойно. Ибо нашёлъ бы въ нёмъ великолѣпіе Испанскаго, живость Французскаго, крепость Нѣмецкаго, нѣжность Италійскаго, сверхъ того богатство и сильную въ изображеніяхъ краткость Греческаго и Латинскаго языка.

*Ломоносовъ.*

The Russian language, the parent of many others, is superior to all the languages of Europe not only by the extent of the countries where it is dominant, but also by its own comprehensiveness and richness. Charles the Fifth, Emperor of the Romans, said that one ought to speak Spanish to the Divinity, French to one's friends, German to one's enemies and Italian to ladies. But had he been acquainted with Russian, he would assuredly have added that one could speak it with each and all. He would have discovered in it the majesty of the Spanish, the vivacity of the French, the strength of the German, the sweetness of the Italian, and in addition energetic conciseness in its imagery with the richness of the Greek and Latin.

*Lomonosoff.*

## THIRD PART

## ORTHOGRAPHY.

## USE OF THE LETTERS.

85.—We have already seen (§ 7—10) that several letters lose their own peculiar sound, taking that of the letter with which they have the closest affinity, and that certain other letters are silent, disappearing entirely in the pronunciation. In such cases the object of *Orthography* is to indicate the letter which has lost its own peculiar sound and taken an accidental one; and, to do that, recourse must be often had to etymology, in order to discover a derivative and give it, by the help of the grammatical forms, such an inflection as may serve to show the form of the doubtful letter.

Vowels. 86.—Several vowels are often confounded in writing, on account of the close affinity or perfect identity of their pronunciation. As this confusion arises almost invariably from the absence of the tonic accent, it is necessary, in order to discover the form of the letter, to find a derivative or an inflection of the word where the doubtful vowel is accented. Thus:



we write :  
 ямщикъ (and not емщикъ), a postilion.  
 яйцо (and not еяцо), an egg. . . .  
 ячмѣнь (and not ечмѣнь), barley. . .  
 тяну (and not теңу), I draw. . . .  
 вяжу (and not вежу), I bind. . . .  
 жалю (and not желю), I pity. . . .  
 шалуѣть (and not мелѣнѣ), a rogue.  
 часы (and not чеси), a watch. . . .  
 щадѣть (and not щедѣть), to spare.  
 молитва (and not малитва), a prayer.  
 вдова (and not едова), the widow. .  
 говорить (and not :аеарѣть), to speak.

because we say :  
 ямъ (primitive word), a relay.  
 яйца (nom. plur.), eggs.  
 ячмѣй (derivative), of barley.  
 тянутъ (3d pers. pl.), they draw.  
 вяжешь (2d pers. sing.), thou bindest.  
 жалѣ (primitive), pity.  
 шалуѣсть (derivative), roguery.  
 часъ (primitive), the hour.  
 щадаѣ (derivative), pardon.  
 онъ молюѣтъ (3d pers. sing.), he prays.  
 вдовы (nom. plur.), the widows.  
 говорѣть, speaking, & разговорѣть, discourse.

Е. Ъ. — The two vowels most commonly confounded are *e* and *ъ*. In order to know which of them ought to be used, recourse must be had to the dictionary. We may however observe that the letter *ъ* is never used in words taken from foreign languages; as: кадѣтъ, a cadet; слѣсарь, a locksmith (Germ. Schlosser); пѣня, fine (Lat. penna), excepting in Вѣна, Vienna, which is properly speaking a Slavonic word. Sometimes the vowel *u* (or *i*) is changed in the derivatives into *ъ*; as: бесѣда, conversation; дѣти, children; Алексѣй, Alexis; Сергѣй, Sergius; Апрель, April (from сидѣть, to be seated; дитя, child; Алексѣй, Сергѣй, Апрель). In the words лѣкарь, a physician; лѣкарство, a medicine; лѣчить, to heal, &c.; which some persons write лѣкаръ, лѣкарство, лечиѣть, the Dictionary of the Russian Academy preserves the letter *ъ*. These vowels may in some occasions be distinguished. As the vowel *e* is in certain cases pronounced *io* or *o*, and the vowel *ъ* has this sound only in some words (§ 8), it is necessary to look for an inflection or a word in which the doubtful vowel is accented. Thus:

we write :  
 слеза (and not слезѣ), the tear. . . . .  
 ель (and not ѣль), the fir. . . . .  
 березникъ (and not берѣзаника), a birch kopse.  
 лѣдникъ (and not льдника), an ice-house. .  
 утвердиѣть (and not утвердѣть), to affirm.  
 угнетѣнѣ (and not угнѣтѣнѣ), persecution.

on account of :  
 слезы (nom. plur.), the tears.  
 ѣлка (diminutive), a little fir.  
 берѣза (primitive), a birch.  
 льдъ (primitive), ice.  
 твѣрдиѣй (primitive), firm.  
 твѣтъ (primitive), stick for packing.

Е. Э. — The vowel *э* is used at the beginning of the Russian words эй, ho! эхъ, hey! этотъ, this; экой and этакой, oh what! also at the beginning of foreign words and after a vowel; e. g. экваторъ, the equator; эфиръ, ether; поэма, a poem;

поѣтъ, a *poet*. After *i* we can in this case employ the vowel *e*, as in *мѣса*, a *piece*. Such words as had been incorporated into the Russian language before the vowel *э* was in use, are written with *e*; as: евангеліе, the *gospel*; епископъ, a *bishop*; епархія, a *diocese*; еunuхъ, an *eunuch*; Европа, *Europe*, and some others. The vowel *e* is further used for the Latin or German letters *je*, *gi* and *ge*; as проѣктъ, a *project*; реѣстръ, a *register*; ефѣсъ, the *sword-hilt*, ефрейторъ, a *corporal* (Lat. *projectum*, *register*; Germ. *Gejäß*, *Gefreiter*).

II. I. — The vowel *i* is used, instead of *u*, before all the vowels and before the semi-vowel *й*; as: сіе, *that*; пріучать, to *accustom*; пріятный, *agreeable*; рѣніи, *genius*, as also in the word міръ, the *world*, and its derivatives: мірскоі, *worldly*; всемірный, *universal*; Владиміръ, *Vladimir*, to be distinguished from миръ, *peace*, and its derivatives; as: мірный, *peaceful*; мирить, to *reconcile*; смірный, *calm*. In words formed from the numerals, as: пяти-аршинный, of *five yards*; семи-угольный, *heptagon*, &c., the letter *u* is retained, but a hyphen must be placed between the two parts of the word. In the word мѣро, the *holy oil*, and its derivatives: муропомазаніе, *unction*; муропомазница, *bearer of aromatics*; муропомазанникъ, the *Lord's anointed*, the Slavonic letter ѱ used has been retained.

II. II. — The vowel *ы* is formed by the union of *э* and *и*; in compound words however it is necessary to retain the form of these two letters, and write, for instance: предъидущій, *preceding*; безымянный, *anonymus*, &c. It is only in the words compounded of искать, to *seek*, and играть, to *play*, that the letters *э* and *и* are joined and form *ы*; e. g. сыщикъ, an *emissary*; розыскъ, the *inquiry*; сыгратъся, to *play quits*; разыгратъ, to *raffle for* (instead of сѣищикъ, рѣзискъ, сѣигратъся, рѣзигратъ). — In foreign words after *и* the vowel *и* is employed, although pronounced *ы*; thus we write медицина, *medicine*; цѣкуль, *compasses*; цѣфра (which some persons write цифра), a *cipher*; excerpting цыганъ, a *gypsy*, and цифирь, *ciphers*. — In the adjectives it is necessary to distinguish the terminations *иѣ* and *иѣ*, as: поѣтный, of *Lent*; лѣтний, of *summer*, and its compounds: совершеннолѣтний, of *full age*; столѣтний, *centenary*; &c.; the word малолѣтний, *young* is an exception.

87.—The semi-vowels (ѣ, ъ, ѱ), the two first of which are placed after consonants, and the last after vowels, are vowels only half uttered (§ 9), ѣ being half of the vowel *o*, ъ half of the vowel *u*.

The semi-vowel ѣ at the end of words may be used after all the consonants, while the semi-vowel ъ cannot be placed either after the gutturals (г, к, х) or the lingual (л). The hard or liquid sound of these two letters, which is generally perceived after consonants, as: *братъ, the brother*, and *братъ, to take*; *пыль, flame*, and *пыль, dust*; *станъ, the stature*, and *станъ, become*, is not distinguished after the hissing letters (ж, ч, ш, щ), as in the words: *ножь, a knife*, and *ложь, a lie*; *мечъ, a sword*, and *сѣчь, to cut*; *камышъ, the reed*, and *мышъ, a mouse*; *тощъ, fasting*, and *нощъ, the night*.

In the middle of a word the semi-vowel ъ is placed after all the consonants, excepting г, к, х, ц; e. g. *судьба, destiny*; *весьма, very*; *обезьяна, a monkey*; *деньги, money*; *письмо, a letter*; *польза, utility*; *сельдь, a herring*; *тюрьма, the prison*, &c. The semi-vowel ѣ, in words formed with a preposition, is only retained before the vowels, *e, u, ѣ, ю, я*; as: *отъѣмю, I take away*; *предъидущій, preceding*; *въѣхать, to enter*; *объюродѣть, to become a fool*; *объявить, to announce*. The same is the case with the Latin prepositions *ad* and *ob*, as in the words *адъютантъ, an adjutant*; *объективный, objective*.

The semi-vowels ъ and ѱ are sufficiently distinct; the former (ъ) can only be used after a consonant, the latter (ѱ) only after a vowel, as we have already seen, § 9.

88.—The feeble consonants (ѳ, в, г, д, ж, з), which, at the end and in the middle of a word before a strong letter, are articulated like their corresponding strong consonants (п, ф, к or х, т, ш, ц, § 10), may be distinguished from the latter by an inflection of the words. Thus:

we write:	бобъ, a bean, and цѣпъ, a flail,	боба and цѣпа.
	ловъ, capture, and графъ, a count,	лѡва and графа.
	кругъ, a circle, and крюкъ, a hook,	круга and крюка.
	Богъ, God, and духъ, spirit,	Бѡга and духа.
	кладъ, treasure, and братъ, brother,	клада and брата.
	ножъ, a knife, and ковшъ, a scoop,	ножа and ковши.
	гузъ, the ace, and усъ, the mustache,	гуза and уса.
	трубка, a pipe, and шапка, a cap,	трубокъ and шапокъ.
	лавка, a bench, and флейка, a blow-pipe,	лавокъ and флейокъ.
	бѣлка, sentry-box, and утка, a duck,	бѣлокъ and утокъ.
	кружка, a goblet, and мѣшка, little fly,	кружекъ and мѣшекъ.
	сказка, a tale, and пляска, a dance,	сказокъ and плясокъ.

In cases where the change of inflection fails to indicate the doubtful letter, recourse must be had to etymology to discover the root from which the derivative word is formed. Thus:

we write:	as coming from	просьба, a prayer (and not <i>прѡсѡба</i> ), . . .	просить, to pray, from the root <i>прос</i> .
		женитьба, marriage (and not <i>женѣдѡба</i> ), . .	женить, to marry (in <i>Sl. женѣдѡва</i> ).
		бѣдочникъ, a sentry (and not <i>бѣточникъ</i> ), .	бѣлка, sentry-box, <i>gen. pl.</i> бѣлокъ.
		присѣтельство, presence (and not <i>присѣдѡстѡе</i> ), .	суть, 3d pers. pl. of <i>есѡ</i> , I am.
		жѣнный, burnt (and not <i>емѣнный</i> ), . . .	жжѣшь, 2d pers. sing. of <i>жгѡ</i> , I burn.
		рабчикъ, a hazelhen (and not <i>рѡнчикъ</i> ), . .	рабѡй, with variegated feathers.
		грѣчневый, of buck-wheat (and not <i>грѣшневый</i> ), .	грѣча, buck-wheat, ч being immutabile.
		свѣчникъ, a candlestick (and not <i>сѡшникъ</i> ), .	свѣча, a candle, from <i>свѣтъ</i> , light.
		гудочникъ, violinist (and not <i>гудѡшникъ</i> ), .	гудѡкъ, violin, т and к change into ч.
		ветѡшникъ, rag-gatherer (and not <i>ветѡшникъ</i> ), .	ветѡшь, a rag, from <i>вѣтъхѡ</i> , old.
		наѡшникъ, slanderer (and not <i>наѡшникъ</i> ), .	ѡхо, the ear, х changes into ш.
		Волѡшскій, Walachian (and not <i>волѡжескій</i> ),	Волѡхъ, a Walachian, x ch. into ш.
		Вѡлжскій, of the Volga (and not <i>вѡлжескій</i> ),	Вѡлга, the Volga, з changes into ж.

The present orthography of the word *порѡчникъ*, a lieutenant (from *поручить*, to commit, from *рука*, the hand), is not in conformity with its etymology; for the termination being *чикъ* (as in *потѡтчикъ*, an indulger, from *потакать*, to connive, from *такъ*, thus), it ought to be written *порѡтчикъ*, as some persons still write it. Another exception is *свѡдѡба*, wedding (formerly *сѡдѡба*), from *свѡтать*, to ask in marriage.

The word *стѡлпъ*, a column, is written in Slavonic with a *п*, as also its derivatives: *стѡлпникъ*, the styliite; *стѡлпнотворѣнѣ*, the building of the tower of Babel; but in Russian it is written with a *б*, *стѡлбъ*, a consonant which is retained in the words *стѡлбовой*, columnar; *стѡлбчакъ*, basalt; *стѡлбнякъ*, tetanus; *остѡлбенѣтъ*, to be stupefied.

3. — The feeble consonant *з* of the preposition *въ* or *воз*, *из*, *низ*, *раз* or *роз*, is changed, in derivatives, before the strong consonants *к*, *п*, *т*, *х*, into its corresponding strong consonant *с*; thus we write: *вспомнить*, to remember; *воспитаніе*, education; *исключить*, to exclude; *исходить*, to descend; *расторгнуть*, to tear up; *рѣчь*, a catalogue (instead of *възпоминить*, *возпитаніе*, *изключить*, *низходить*, *разторгнуть*, *рѣчь*). Before the strong consonants *с*, *ц*, *ч*, *ш* and *щ*, the letter *з* keeps its form, as in *изстари*, formerly; *разцвѣстїи*, to open; *изчѣзнуть*, to disappear; *возшествіе*, accession; *разцѣпъ*, a slit. The prepositions *безъ* and *чрезъ* in this case remain unchanged; thus we write: *безподобный*, incomparable; *чрезчуръ*, excessively (and not *бесподобный*, *чресчуръ*). It is the same with the preposition *съ*, which retains its form before a feeble consonant, although it then takes the pronunciation of *з*; thus we should write: *сбавить*, to diminish; *сдѣлать*, to make; *сгонять*, to drive off; *сжимать*, to compress (and not *збавить*, *здѣлать*, *згонять*, *зжимать*).

II. — The compound consonant *ц* cannot be used instead of *mc* or *dc*, when *m* and *d* are radical letters, and *c* belongs to the termination of the word; thus we write: *плѣтскій*, carnal, from *плоть*, the flesh; *персидскій*, Persian, from the Latin *Persis*, *sidis* (and not *плѣцскій*, *персѣцскій*); but we write: *нѣмецкій*, German, from *Нѣмецъ*, a German; *казакскій*, Cossack's, from *казакъ*, a Cossack. In the numerals we write *дц*, as: *одинадцать*, eleven; *двадцать*, twenty, words contracted from the Slavonic *одѣнь-на-десять*, *двѣ-десять*.

III. — The compound consonant *щ*, in the derivatives, is the commutation of *ск* and *см*, or else it supplies the place of the consonants *зч*, *лшч*, *сч*, as: *вошій*, to wash, from *вощъ*, *вош*; *умащать*, to anoint, from *масть*, balm; *приказникъ*, a clerk, from *приказъ*, an order; *рѣщикъ*, a cutter, from *рѣзать*, to cut. But the form of the radical letters is retained in the words *счастье*, happiness; *считать*, to count; *счѣтъ*, *разсчѣтъ*, an account; *мужчина*, a man, which must not be written *щастіе*, *щитать*, *щѣтъ*, *разщѣтъ*, though we also write *мущина*.

Ф. Θ. — The consonants *φ* and *θ* are used, the former for Russian words, and such Greek and other words as are



from водѣть, to lead, by the change of ѣ into ие.—  
 5) Lastly consonants are doubled in some foreign words; e. g. аббатъ, an abbot; суббота, Saturday; акула, a shark; классъ, a class; колосъ, a colossus; коллегія, a college; металлъ, a metall, &c.

90.—The *capital* letters (прописныя буквы) are <sup>Capital letters.</sup> employed, generally speaking, in Russian as in English. Thus a capital letter is placed at the beginning of every sentence, of every line of poetry, of all the proper names of men, places, nations, rivers, mountains and winds, as also of all those of a science, an art or a profession, if taken in an individual sense which distinguishes the particular science, art or profession from every other. All titles and ranks joined to a proper name must also be distinguished by an initial capital, and the same is the case with the appellative names of tribunals, companies and corporate bodies.

#### DIVISION OF WORDS INTO SYLLABLES.

91.—The division of words into syllables, when one part has to be carried on from one line to another, is marked by the hyphen, and is performed according to the following rules which are based on the etymology of the words:

1. Monosyllables, as: страсть, *passion*; здравъ, *in health*; чувствъ, *of the senses (gen. pl.)*, cannot be divided.

2. Prepositions and every other affix, whether initial or final, may be separated from the rest of the

word; e. g. от-рада, *mitigation*; о-трава, *poison*; без-конеч-ный, *infinite*; востокъ, *the East*; мед-вѣдь, *a bear*; раз-умъ, *reason*; свойство, *property*; ям-щикъ, *a postilion*; зем-скій, *terrestrial*; друж-ба, *friendship*; Царь-градъ, *Constantinople*, &c.

3. The compound consonants *жд*, *ст*, as also *кс*, *кз*, *нс* and *ѣне* in foreign words, cannot be divided; e. g. ме-жду, *between*; три-ста, *three hundred*; Але-ксандръ, *Alexander*; э-кзаменъ, *examination*; кле-псидра, *a clepsydra*; Роджеръ, *Roger*.

4. The final vowels, as: *своѧ*, *his*; *крутоѧ*, *steep*; as well as the terminations of the verbs, as: *поютъ*, *they sing*; *строѧтъ*, *they build*; *жалѧеть*, *he regrets*, cannot be separated from the rest of the word.

#### ORTHOGRAPHY OF ISOLATED WORDS.

Russian  
words.

92.—Every Russian word is written as a single word, if by the loss of one of its component parts the sense would be changed; e. g. соучаствникъ, *an accomplice*; избранный, *elected*; отчётъ, *an account*; прибыль, *a gain*; мореходъ, *the navigation*; водопроводъ, *an aqueduct*, &c. On this subject the following rules must be observed:

1) The prepositions which are employed both conjointly and separately (§ 76), are written conjointly: *a*) Before the verbs and words derived from them; e. g. приносить, *to bring*; принось, *a gift*; приношеніе, *the offering*; приноситель, *a bearer*, &c. *b*) Before such other parts of speech as are not used without the preposition; as: навѣкъ, *the habit*; извѣстный, *known*; встарь, *anciently*;



НАВЗНИЧЬ, *backwards*; ОЗЕМЬ, *on the ground*. c) Before nouns, adjectives, pronouns and adverbs as form with the preposition an adverb or a conjunction; e. g. ВСТАРИНУ́, *formerly*; ИЗВНѢ́, *from without*; СНАЧАЛА́, *in the first place*; ВСТѢДѢ́, *in the footsteps*; ПОТОМУ́, *hence*. If the noun from which the adverb is formed, is determined by another word, the preposition is written separately; e. g. СЪ НАЧѢ́ЛН ВѢ́КА, *at the beginning of the century*; ПО ТОМУ́ СЛУ́ЧАЮ, *on this occasion*. The adverbs ВО-ПѢ́РВЫХЪ, *firstly*, ВО-ВТО́РЫХЪ, *secondly*; ПО-РУ́ССКИ, *in Russian*; ПО-СОЛДА́ТЕКИ, *like soldiers*, and others similar, as also the compound prepositions ИЗЪ-ЗА́, *from behind*, and ИЗЪ-ПО́ДЪ, *from under*, are written with the hyphen (§ 94, 2).

2. The prefix particle *нѣ* is always written conjointly with the pronoun or the adverb following; as: НѢ́КТО, *some one*; НѢ́КОТОРЫ́Й, *some*; НѢ́КОГДА́, *once*.

3. The particle *ни* is written conjointly in the words НИ́КТО́, *nobody*; НИ́ЧТО́, *nothing*; НИ́ГДѢ́, НИ́КУДА́, *nowhere*; НИ́КОГДА́, *never*; НИ́КАКЪ́, *not at all*, and separately in all other words; as: НИ́ КОТО́РЫЙ, *none*; НИ́ зерна́, *not a grain*.

4) The negative *не* is written separately before verbs and the circumstantial adverbs; as: не смѣ́ю, *I dare not*; не здѣ́сь, *not here*, with the exception of verbs whose proper meaning is changed by the negative *не*, or which are not used without the negative; as: не доставáть, *to be wanting*; ненави́дѣть, *to hate*; недоувѣ́рять, *to distrust*. It is written conjointly with nouns, qualifying adjectives and adverbs, when the negation refers to the object

or to the quality, and not to the verb; e. g. *неравенство нравовъ* бываетъ причиною споровъ, *dissimilarity of character is the cause of the quarrels*; *несносная скѣка* убиваетъ меня, *an unbearable enemy is killing me*; я гуляю неохотно, *I walk against my will*; and also when the noun has no meaning without the negation; e. g. *нѣтопырь*, *a bat*; *негодѣй*, *a good-for-nothing*; *нѣдугъ*, *a disease*. With the participles the negative *не* is written conjointly when, like the adjectives, they serve to determine the nouns; and separately when, like the verbs, they have a complement; e. g. *незнающій* человекъ, *an ignorant man*; человекъ, *не знающій* своихъ обязанностей, *the man who is ignorant of his duties*.

5. The particle *бы* or *бѣ* is written conjointly only in the conjunctions *чтобы* (or *чтобѣ*) and *дабы*, *that*; everywhere else it is written separately. It is necessary to distinguish the conjunction *чтобы* from the pronoun *что* with *бы*; e. g. *желаю, чтобы онъ далъ тебѣ эту книгу*, *I wish him to give you this book*; *что бы далъ я за эту книгу*, *what would I have given for this book!* In the latter case *бы* is written separately.

6. The conjunction *уже* or *ужѣ* is conjointly written in the words *ужѣ* or *ужѣ*, *already*; *даже*, *even*; *ниже*, *not even*, and separately in the other words; as: *или же*, *or even*; *однако же*, *however*; *тотъ же*, *the same*. It is also written conjointly in the copulative conjunction *также*, and the adverb *тоже*, *too*; but it is written separately in the comparative conjunction *такъ же*, *as well*, and in the pronoun *то*

же, *the same*; е. г. онъ такъ же хорошо пишеть, какъ читаетъ, *he writes as well as he reads*: онъ такъ же дворянинъ, *he is also gentleman*; я боленъ и онъ тоже, *I am sick and he too*; я говорю то же, что и вы, *I say the same thing as you*.

93.—Foreign words are written with those letters Foreign words. of the Russian alphabet, which give as closely as possible the pronunciation of these words in the language from which they are borrowed: the rule is the base of the orthography of foreign words. Such are for instance the words: епархія, *a diocese*; кáведра, *the pulpit* (*Gr. ἐπαρχία, κάδεδρα*); сенáторъ, *a senator*; корóна, *a crown* (*Lat. senator, corona*); áжio, *the agio*; карéта, *a carriage* (*Ital. agio, carreta*); футъ, *a foot*; сплннъ, *the spleen* (from the *English*); актёръ, *an actor*; медáль, *a medal* (*Fr. acteur, médaille*); брѹстверъ, *the parapet*; кѹчеръ, *a coachman* (*Germ. Brustwehr, Kutscher*); ватерпáсъ, *a level*; фарвáтеръ, *the channel* (*Dutch: waterpas, vaarwater*); вѣнзель, *a cipher*; трактёръ, *an eating-house keeper* (*Pol. wozel, traktyer*). Some of these words in passing into the Russian language have taken terminations peculiar to it, while others have undergone an alteration both in their pronunciation and orthography; such are: фитиль, *a match*; фонарь, *a lanthorn* (*mod. Gr. φωτίλ, φαῖάριον*); алтáрь, *an altar*; мрáморъ, *marble* (*Lat. altare, marmor*); яхта, *a yacht*; мичманъ, *a midshipman* (from the *English*); шпáга, *a sword* (*Ital. spada*); салфéтка, *a napkin*; табакёрка, *a snuff-box* (*Fr. serviette, tabatière*); бѣржа, *the exchange*; тарéлка, *a plate* (*Germ. Börse, Teller*); шкѣперъ,

*master of a merchantship*; шлюзъ, *a sluice* (*Dutch: schipper, sluis*), &c.

The same thing takes place in the Greek and Latin proper names; as: Александръ, *Alexander*; Николѣй, *Nicholas*; Филиппъ, *Philip*; Павель, *Paul*; Елена, *Helen*; Августъ, *Augustus*; Юлій, *Julius*; Наталія, *Nataly*. Some follow the pronounciation of both Greek and Latin; as: Омѣръ and Гомѣръ, *Homer*; Алкивіадъ and Алцибіадъ, *Alcibiades*; Фивъ and Фебъ, *Phæbus*; Віотія and Беотія, *Beotia*. Others are formed from the Greek or Latin genitive; as: Біантъ, *Bias*; Цицеронъ, *Cicero*; Артемѣда, *Artemis*; Іліада, *the Iliad*; Венѣра, *Venus*; Церѣра, *Ceres*.

The proper names of lands, countries, rivers, towns and other names of modern geography, some retain their Latin denomination; as: Германія, *Germany*; Австрія, *Austria*; Сцилія, *Sicily*; Неаполь, *Naples*; Флоренція, *Florence*; Везувій, *Vesuvius*, &c. Others are written as they are pronounced in the language to which they belong; as: Лондонъ, *London*; Чѣлси, *Chelsea*; Гриничъ, *Greenwich*; Мюнхенъ, *Munich*; Майнцъ, *Mayence*; Брюссель, *Brussels*; Маасъ, *the Meuse*; Шѣльда, *the Scheldt*; Рейнъ, *the Rhine*; Кордóва, *Cordova*; Хересъ, *Xeres*; Бадахóсъ, *Badajoz*; Схевенингенъ, *Schevening*; Кѣльнъ, *Cologne*; Рѣгенсбургъ, *Ratisbon*; Литтихъ, *Liège*; Ахенъ, *Aix-la-Chapelle*; Карлсрýэ, *Carlsruhe*; Піачѣнца, *Piacenza*; Ливорно, *Leghorn*; Бордó, *Bordeaux*; Марсѣль, *Marseille*; Лоáра, *the Loire*, &c. Some of these names have passed into the Russian through another language; such

are: Паріжъ, *Paris* (from the Italian *Parigi*); Римъ, *Rome* (from the Polish *Rzym*); Копенгагенъ, *Copenhagen* (from the German *Kopenhagen*, instead of the Danish *Kiøbenhavn*). Some German names of countries and towns inhabited by Slavonian tribes have been replaced by Slavonic names; as: Вѣна, *Vienna*; Бреслауль, *Breslau*; Торѹнь, *Thorn*; Львовъ, *Lemberg*; Вѣнгрія, *Hungary*, and some others.

The proper names of historical persons and others in modern languages are written in Russian according to the pronunciation of the language to which they belong; such are the English names: Шекспиръ, *Shakespeare*; Бейронъ, *Byron*; Юмъ, *Hume*; Джонсонъ, *Folnson*; Ньютонъ, *Newton*; the French names: Ришельё, *Richelieu*; Даву, *Davoust*; Руссо, *Rousseau*; Ролленъ, *Rollin*; Деліль, *Delille*; the German names: Блюхеръ, *Blücher*; Виландъ, *Wieland*; Гёте, *Gæthe*; Гайднъ, *Haydn*; the Italian names: Херубини, *Cherubini*; Чимароза, *Cimarosa*; the Polish names: Чарторыскій, *Czartoryski*; Потockая, *Potocka*; Нѣмцевичъ, *Niemcewicz*, &c.

We may here remark that the proper names of the Russian language, the alphabet of which differs from that of the other European tongues, ought to be written in each foreign language in such a manner as to give as closely as possible the Russian pronunciation. Thus the Russian proper names: Карамзинъ, Пушкінъ, Державинъ, Шишковъ, Жуковскій, Мещерскій, Чичеринъ, Казань, Вязьма, Ржевъ, Житомиръ, are written in English: *Karamzin*, *Pushkin*, *Derzhavin*, *Shishkof*, *Zhukovski*, *Mestcherski*, *Tchitcherin*, *Kazan*, *Viazma*, *Rzhev*, *Zhitomir*, in French: *Karamesine*, *Pouchekine*, *Derjavine*, *Chichekof*, *Joukovski*, *Mestcherski*, *Tchitchérine*, *Kazan*, *Viazma*, *Rjev*, *Jitomir*; in German: *Karamsin*, *Puschkin*, *Derzhavin*, *Schischtow*, *Schukowski*, *Mejschtscherski*, *Tschitscherin*, *Kasan*, *Wjazma* or *Wäzma*, *Rishev*, *Schitomir*, and

the same in other languages. Exceptions will be found to this rule in certain proper names which have been adopted long ago; as: Москва, Санктпетербургъ, Варшава, Митава, and some others; in English: *Moscow, Saint-Petersburg, Warsaw, Mittau*; in French: *Moscou, Saint-Petersbourg, Varsovie, Mittau*; in German: *Moskau, St. Petersburg, Warichau, Mittau*. See the particular Vocabularies of the *Parallel Dictionaries of the Russian, French, German and English languages*.

#### ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS.

94.—The *orthographic signs* (знаки правописанія) of the Russian language are: the *accent* (удареніе), the *hyphen* (единительный знакъ or черточка), the *sign of brevity* (краткая) and the *diæresis* (надстрочное двоеточіе).

1. The *accent* (') serves to distinguish the homonyms or words which though written alike have a different meaning, as also the similar inflections of the words; as: замокъ, *a castle*, and замо́къ, *a lock*; подать, *the tax*, and подáть, *to give*; стои́тъ, *it costs*, and стои́тъ, *he is up*; выходи́тъ, *to obtain*, and выходи́тъ, *to go out*; слова́, *of the word (gen. sing.)*, and слова́, *the words (nom. plur.)*. The accent is further placed on the relative pronoun что́, to be distinguished from the conjunction что; e. g. зна́ешь ли что́ тебѣ полезно, *dost thou know what is useful to thee?* and зна́ешь ли, что́ тебѣ полезно уч́еніе, *dost thou know that study is useful to thee?*

2. The *hyphen* (-) is used to mark the connection between two or more words; e. g. Алексáн-

дро-Невская Лавра, *the monastery of St-Alexander Nevsky*; генералъ-маіоръ, *major general*; штабъ-офицеръ, *field officer*; Пванъ-да-Марья, *cow-wheat*. The hyphen is also used with the adverbs formed from the prepositions *so* and *no*, with the compound prepositions (§ 92. 1), and with the particle *no*: какъ-то, *such as*; что-то, *something*. It is also used at the end of a line, when a part of a word has to be carried on to the line following.

3. The *sign of brevity* (◌) is placed over the vowel *u* (ii), converting it into a semi-vowel, which joined with the preceding vowel forms only a syllable; as: мои, *my*; сеи, *this*; неидётъ, *he does not go*; наити, *to find*. This mark is also used in prosody to indicate the short syllables, as we shall see when speaking of Russian versification.

4. The *diæresis* (¨) is a double dot which is placed over the vowel *e* (ë), when it has the sound of *io* or *o*; e. g. слёзы, *tears*; жёлтый, *yellow*. The letter *ë* is also used as the equivalent of the French *eu* and the German *ö*, as in the words Монтескьё, *Montesquieu*; актёръ, *player* (*Fr. acteur*); Гёте, *Gæthe* (*Germ. Göthe*).

#### MARKS OF PUNCTUATION.

95.—The *marks of punctuation* (знаки препонанія) are the same in Russian as in English, viz: the *comma* (запятая ,), the *semicolon* (точка съ запятою ;), the *colon* (двоеточіе :), the *full stop* or *period* (точка .), the *note of interrogation* (знакъ

вопросительный ?), the *note of exclamation* (знакъ восклицательный !), the *points of suspension* (знакъ пресѣкательный . . . .), the *dash* (знакъ мыслеотдѣлительный or тире —), the *parenthesis* (вмѣстительный знакъ or скобки ( )), the *inverted commas* or *quotation* (внѣснѣй знакъ or кавычки « ») and the *paragraph* (крѣсная строкá). The use of these marks of punctuation is nearly the same in all languages.

---



## FOURTH PART

## PROSODY.

96.—Prosody consists of two parts: 1) *orthoepy* (слоγοударѣніе), or the measured pronunciation of syllables and words, and 2) *versification* (стихосложѣніе), which teaches the laws of writing poetry correctly.

Division of  
prosody.

## ORTHOEPY.

97.—In the pronunciation of words attention must be paid not only to the particular articulation of each of the letters of which they may be composed, but also and especially to the accented syllable. The *prosodical* or *tonic accent* (ударѣніе, § 12) is a stress of the voice which is heard in one of the syllables of a polysyllabic word, so that this syllable shall strike the ear more forcibly than the others and appear to predominate over them. Thus in the words вода, *water*; небо, *the sky*; свобода, *liberty*; превосходительство, *excellency*, the voice is raised in the syllables *да*, *не*, *бо*, *ду*. The accented syllable is, in prosody, called *strong* or *long*, and the unaccented syllables *weak* or *short*.

Prosodical  
or tonic  
accent.

Place of the  
accent.

98.—The accent, in polysyllabic words, is found:  
1) on the radical syllable: ВѢДѢТЬ, *to know*; ВѢДО-  
МОСТЬ, *information*; НЕВѢЖЕСТВО, *ignorance*; ИСПОВѢ-  
ДАТЬ, *to confess*; УВѢДОМИТЬ, *to inform*; ИЗВѢСТІЕ,  
*news*; 2) on the termination: ВѢДУНЪ, *a sorcerer*;  
ВѢСТОВОЙ, *orderly*; ИЗВѢСТИТЬ, *to notify*; ЗАПОВѢДНОЙ,  
*interdicted*; 3) on the preposition: ВЫВѢДАТЬ, *to ex-  
plore*; ЗАПОВѢДЬ, *commandment*; ПОВѢСТЬ, *a tale*;  
СОВѢСТЬ, *conscience*; 4) on the prefix in compound  
words: БЛАГОВѢСТИТЬ, *to ring to church*.

These examples show that the accentuation of words in Russian is very variable; and practice and the dictionary can alone enable us to place the accent correctly, as no fixed rules on the subject have hitherto been discovered. We may however remark that a word, when standing alone, may be accented differently to what it is, when joined to other words; thus the pronouns at times lose their accent; again, the nouns and the numerals which have the moveable accent, in the other cases often transfer it to the preposition; in like manner the apocopated adjectives and the verbs transfer it to the negative; e. g. ЧТІ́Й ОТЦА́ ТВОЕГО́ И МА́ТЕРЬ ТВОЮ́, *honour thy father and thy mother*; ДРУЗЬЯ́ МОИ, *my friends*; ПО́ БЕРЕГУ́, *along the shore*; ЗА́ МОРЕМЪ́, *beyond the sea*; ОНЪ́ НЕ́ ВЕСЕЛЪ́, *he is not gay*; Я́ НЕ́ БРАЛЪ́, *I have not taken*. We may here repeat, what we have already indicated in the declensions and conjugations, that, in the change of inflections, the accent is often transferred from one syllable to another.

VERSIFICATION.

99.—The Russian versification, which, like that of England and Germany, is based on the prosodical accent, is termed *tonic* versification; while that of French language and various other modern tongues, depending on the number of syllables employed, is called *syllabic*, and that of the Greeks and Romans, which is based on quantity or the length and brevity of the syllables, is termed *metrical*. Tonic versification.

100.—In the tonic versification the verses are also measured by *feet*, as in Greek and Latin. The *foot* (стопá) or *metre* (размѣръ), in Russian poetry, is formed by the union of two or three syllables, one of which has the prosodical accent. The feet employed in the structure of Russian verse are six in number, viz: Foot or metre.

1. The *iambus* (ямбъ), composed of two syllables with the prosodical accent on the last, ∪—: зима́, весна́.

2. The *choræus* (хорейъ) or *trochee* (трохейъ), consisting of two syllables with the accent on the first, ∪—: лѣто, осень.

3. The *pyrrhic* (пиррихій), formed of two unaccented syllables, ∪∪: such are the two first syllables of безпо́лезный. The pyrrhic in the middle of a line is used instead of an iambus or a trochee.

4. The *dactyl* (дактиль), formed of three syllables with the accent on the first, —∪∪: па́лица, ра́достный.

5. The *amphibrach* (амфибра́хій), formed of three syllables with the accent on the second, ∪—∪: причи́на, пѣлѹю.

6. The *anapæst* (анѧпестъ), formed of three syllables with the accent on the last, — — —: человекъ, временѧ.

Denomina-  
tion of the  
verses.

101.—The verse or line of poetry takes its name from the nature of the feet of which it is composed. There are verses of six, five, four, three, two feet, and even of one, which are termed *iambic*, *choraic*, *dactylic*, *amphibrachic*, *anapæstic*, *dactylo-choraic*, *anapæsto-iambic*, according as they may be formed of a single one of these metres or of a combination of several. The lines which have not the same number of feet are termed *free* verses (вольные стихи).

The verses most commonly employed in modern Russian poetry are the following:

1. The *hexameters* or the *dactylo-choraic* verses of six feet, of which the four first are dactyls or trochees, the fifth a dactyl, and the sixth a trochee. This line is an imitation of the Greek and Latin hexameter, from which it differs only in the employment of trochees instead of spondees, which do not exist in Russian. It is used in epic poems, especially in such as are translations from the ancient languages. Ex.

— — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — —  
— — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — —

Гѣкторъ гербѧ съ колесницѧ съ оружіемъ спрянулъ на зѣмлю;  
Острыя кѧпья колѣбля, потѣкъ по рядѧмъ ополченій.  
Въ бой распалѧя Тройнѧ; и возжѣгъ жестокую сѣчу;  
Всѧ обратѧлись отъ бѣгства и стѧли въ лицѣ Аргивѧнамъ.

Гибдичъ.

2. The *iambic* verses of six feet, or *alexandrine* (александрійскіе), are used in great compositions, such as epic and didactic poems, tragedies, comedies, satires, epistles, elegies, idyls, &c.; e. g.

— — — — —  
— — — — —

Ужé блвднётъ день, скрываясь за горóю;  
Шумящія сгадá толпятся надъ рэкóй.

Жуковскій.

3. The *iambic* verses of five feet, but seldom used; e. g.

Ты говоришь, что мучусь надъ стихóмъ,  
Что не пишу́ его, а сочи́няю.

Князь Вяземскій.

The *iambic* verse of five feet is sometimes used alternately with that of six; e. g.

Какбе торжество гóтовитъ дрéвній Римъ?  
Кудá текúть народа шумны вóлны?

Батюшковъ.

4. The *iambic* verses of four feet are used in odes and other lyrical poems; and those of three, two and even a single foot, in songs and other light compositions; e. g.

О ты, что въ гóрести напрáсно  
На Бóга ропщешь, человéкъ!  
Внима́й, коль въ рéвности ужáсно  
Онъ къ Гову изъ тóчи рекъ.

Ломоносовъ.

Ужé со тмóю но́щи  
Простёрлась тишина́;  
Выходитъ изъ-за рóщи  
Печальная луна́.

Капнистъ.

Играй, Аделъ,  
Не знай печаль!  
Хариты, дель  
Тебя венчалъ.

А.А. Пушкинъ.

Ступай,  
Сзывай  
Съ лесовъ  
Всѣхъ псовъ  
На край  
Ай, ай!

Державинъ.

5. The *free iambic* verses are employed in fables, tales, epigrams, epitaphs, inscriptions, &c.; e. g.

Въ прихожей на полу,  
Въ углу,  
Пустой мышонокъ валился.  
У самыхъ низкихъ слугъ  
Онъ на обѣлку ногъ нерѣдко помыкался;  
Какъ вдругъ  
Мышонокъ нашъ въ честь попался,  
И весь червонцами набитъ:  
Въ окóванномъ ларцѣ въ сохранности лежить.

Крыловъ.

6. The *choraic* or *trochaic* verses of six, five, four, three and two feet, sometimes of the same length and sometimes of a different length, are used in various poems. The choraics of four feet are chiefly used in songs; e. g.

— — — — —  
— — — — —

Нѣтъ подруги нѣжной, нѣтъ прелестной Лилы!  
Всё осиротѣло!  
Плачь, Любовь и Дружба! плачь, Гимѣнь унылый!  
Счастье улетѣло!

Батюшковъ.

Слѣвсья, Алексѣандръ, Елсавѣта,  
До вечерней тихихъ дней зарі;  
И сіяніе въ страну полсвѣта  
Съ высоты престола распростри.

Бобрѣвъ.

Стѣнетъ сізый голубѣчекъ,  
Стѣнетъ онъ и день и ночь;  
Миленькій его дружѣчекъ  
Отлетѣтъ надѣлго прочъ.

Дмитріевъ.

Всѣхъ цвѣтѣчковъ бѣлъ  
Рѣзу я любилъ;  
Ею только въ полѣ  
Взоръ мой веселилъ.

Дмитріевъ.

Мы сердцами  
И слезами  
Молимъ васъ,  
Бѣги гнѣва  
И Эрева,  
Въ страшный часъ.

Карамзинъ.

7. The *dactylic* verses, composed of dactyls alone, are only used with two, three or four feet, when longer they become fatiguing to the ear; e. g.

— 00 — 00 — 00 | — 00 |

Бѣже! Царя храни!  
Сильный, державный,  
Царствуй на славу намъ;  
Царствуй на страхъ врагамъ;  
Царь православный.  
Бѣже! Царя храни!

Жуковскій.

О домовѣтая ластѣчка!  
Маленька, сізенька птичка!  
Грудь краснобѣла, косѣточка,  
Лѣтняя гостя, пѣищка!

Державинъ.

Рѳза ль, ты рѳзочка, рѳза душистая,  
 Всѣмъ ты красавица, рѳза цвѣтокъ,  
 Вѣйся, плетися съ лилеей и ландышемъ,  
 Вѣйся, плетися въ мой пышный вѣнокъ.

Баронъ Дельвицъ.

8. The *dactylo-choraic* verses of four, three and two feet, are more commonly met with than the pure dactyls, and are used in songs, odes and other lyric poems; e. g.

— — — | — — — | — — — | — —

Гдѣ ты, прекрасная, гдѣ обитаешь?  
 Тамъ ли, гдѣ пѣсни поѣтъ Филомѣла,  
 Кроткая ночи пѣвица,  
 Сидя на миртовой вѣтви?

Карамзинъ.

Пчѣлка златая,  
 Что ты жужжишь?  
 Всѣ вокругъ летая,  
 Прочь не летишь.

Державинъ.

9. The *amphibrachic* verses of six and five feet are employed in idyls, epistles, elegies; and those of four, three and two feet in various lyrical compositions; e. g.

— — — | — — — | — — — | — — — | — — —

Въ часы пированья, при сладостномъ пѣнии струнъ оживленныхъ,  
 Уныніе мрачно на мигъ не оставило милого гостя.  
 Снѣдающая горестъ лежитъ глубоко въ его сердце!  
 Умоляйте, пѣсни! да чистую радость раздѣлять согласно.

Мѣрляковъ.

Владыка Морвѣны  
 Жилъ въ дѣдовскомъ замкѣ могучій Ордамъ.  
 Надъ озеромъ стѣны  
 Зубчатые замокъ съ холма возвышалъ.

Жуковскій.



Въ то время съ весною  
Любѣвъ насъ ждала:  
Въ то время . . . со мною  
Подруга жила.

Мих. Димітріевъ.

10. The *anapæstic* verses from one to four feet are used in odes and also in fables; e. g.

— — — — —

Посмотри,  
И держи ты въ умѣ,  
Нѣсь мужикъ пуда три  
На продажу свищу въ небольшой котомѣ.

Сумароковъ.

The *anapæstic* line is sometimes used alternately with the *amphibrachic*; e. g.

Не стремись добродѣтель напрасно  
Людей отъ неправды унять.  
Въ нихъ пороки плодятся всечасно:  
Нельзя ихъ ничѣмъ исправлять.

Богдановичъ.

11. The *anapæsto-iambic* verses are oftener employed than the above mentioned; e. g.

— — — — —

Ты бѣги, бѣги, нашъ злодѣй отъ насъ;  
Не дадимъ тебѣ поругаться намъ.  
Ты взгляни, взгляни на солдатъ своихъ  
Между реберъ ихъ ужъ трава растётъ.

Шулѣнниковъ.

102.—The *cæsura* (престѣненіе) is a rest which divides the line of poetry into two parts, each of which is called a *hemistich* or half verse. This rest, which is only found in the *iambic* verses of

six and of five feet, and in the trochaic verses of six feet, requires the word to be finished after the third foot in lines of six feet, and after the second in lines of five. *Ex.*

Изъ мрачныхъ нѣдръ земныхъ | исходитъ бурный пламень;  
Кустарники дрожать, | о камень бѣется камень.

*Херасковъ.*

И щитъ и мечъ | бросають съ знаменами;  
Вездѣ пути | покрыты ихъ костями.

*Жукѣвскій.*

Здѣсь Гименъ прикованъ, | блѣдный и безгласный,  
Гасить у гробницы | свой свѣтильникъ ясный.

*Батюшковъ.*

Though it is not absolutely necessary that the *cæsura* should be always marked so distinctly, still the syllable terminating the first hemistich can never be united with that commencing the second; thus the *cæsura* can never come between a preposition and its complement.

Termination  
of the  
verses.

103.—The syllable terminating a line of poetry may be either strong or accented, or it may be weak or unaccented. In the former case the termination is *masculine*, and in the latter *feminine*; e. g.

Люблю, любить ввѣкъ буду! *fem. term.*

Кляните страсть мою, *masc. term.*

Безжалостныя души, *fem. term.*

Жестокія сердца! *masc. term.*

*Крамзѣнъ.*

From this double termination it results that lines of the same metre have not always the same number of syllables. Iambic verses of six feet have twelve syllables with the masculine termination, and thirteen with the feminine; those of four feet have eight syllables with the masculine and nine

with the feminine. Choraic verses of four feet have seven syllables with the masculine termination, and eight with the feminine. The same rule applies equally to the other verses.

104.—The uniformity of sound in the words terminating lines of poetry forms *rhyme* (рифма), which is also *masculine* or *feminine*, according to the termination of the verse; e. g.

Кто будет принимать мой пепелъ отъ костра?	} <i>masc. rhyme.</i>
Кто будетъ безъ тебя, о милая сестра,	
За гробомъ слѣдовать въ одѣждѣ погребальной,	} <i>fem. rhyme.</i>
И мѣро изливать надъ урною печальной?	

Батюшковъ.

Rhymes were introduced into the poetry of such modern tongues as could not imitate the Greek and Latin versification, because, the language of poetry differing in them but little from prose, something was requisite to please the ear; in Russian however, where the accent is strongly marked and supplies the place of quantity, rhyme is not absolutely necessary; the same is the case in English and German, while in French rhyme is indispensable. Poetry without rhyme is called *blank verses* (бѣлые стихи). Verses which in Russian poetry are always written without rhyme, are the hexameters and those imitating metres of the ancient languages.

105.—According to the various combinations of the masculine and feminine rhymes, they are divided into *consecutive* (парные стихи), *alternate* (переступные) and *mixed* (смѣшанные). This combination of rhymes is used chiefly in stanzas. A *stanza* or *strophe* consists of a number of verses expressing a complete idea. It varies in length from four to fourteen lines. We here give an example of the strophe of four lines in alternate rhymes, and another of the strophe of fourteen lines, in mixed rhymes and choraic metre.

Бсѣ вокругъ уныло! Чуть зефиръ весенній  
 Памятникъ лобзаетъ;  
 Здѣсь въ жилищѣ плача, тихій смѣрти гений  
 Розу обрываетъ.

*Батюшковъ.*

Разъ въ Крещенскій вечерокъ  
 Дѣвушки гадали:  
 За ворота башмачокъ,  
 Снявъ съ ногъ, бросали;  
 Снѣгъ полѣли; подъ окномъ  
 Слушали; кормили  
 Счетнымъ курицу зерномъ;  
 Яркій воскъ топили;  
 Въ чашу съ чистою водою  
 Клали перстень золотой,  
 Сѣргы изумрудны;  
 Разстлали бѣлый платъ,  
 И надъ чашей пѣли въ ладъ  
 Пѣсенки подлѣбны.

*Жуковскій.*

Poetic  
 licenses.

102.—In following the above rules of versification the poet is at time compelled to sacrifice some of the minor principles of grammar, to syncopate terminations, and to place words in an inverted order. These sacrifices to number, harmony, rhyme and elegance, are termed *poetic licenses* (стихотворческія вольности).

# CORRECT CONSTRUCTION

## OF THE EXERCISES

We started for Potsdam on horseback yesterday at six o'clock in the morning. Nothing can be duller than this road; there is nothing but deep sand everywhere and not a single object of interest meets the eye. The view of Potsdam however, and particularly that of Sans-Souci is very fine. We stopped at an hotel, before arriving to the gates of the town. After resting ourselves and ordering our dinner, we entered the town. At the gate our names were written down. On the parade square, opposite the palace, which is adorned with Roman colonnades, the guards were exercising: the men are superb, and the uniforms splendid. The view of the palace from the garden is very fine. The town is generally speaking well built; in the principal street there are several magnificent houses constructed on the plan of the largest palaces of Rome at the expense of the late king: he gave them to any one he chose. At present these vast edifices are empty or only occupied by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under the care of a Russian soldier, who has lived there from the time of the Empress Anne. We had some difficulty in finding him. The decrepit old man was seated in a large arm-chair, and having heard that we are Russians, he extended his hands towards us and exclaimed with a trembling voice: "Glory to God! Glory to God!" He tried at first to speak

Reading-  
Exercise.  
p. 18.

with us in Russian; but we had difficulty in understanding each other. We were obliged to repeat almost every word. "Let us go into the temple of God", said he, "and let us pray together, though there is no church festival to-day." My heart was filled with devotion, when I saw the door of this church opened, where solemn silence has reigned so long, scarcely broken by the low sighs and the feeble voice of the old man in prayer, who comes every sunday to read in this spot the holiest of books, which prepares him for a happy eternity. In the church every thing is neat and clean. The books and the church ornaments are kept in a trunk. The old man arranges them from time to time reverently praying. "It often grieves me to the heart", said he, "to think that after my death, which cannot be far distant, no one will take care of this church." We remained half an hour in this holy spot; then bidding the venerable old man adieu, we wished him a peaceful death.

*Karamzin.*

Exercises on  
declension of  
substantives  
P. 58.

Хозяинъ сада и хозяйка дома. Садъ хозяина и домъ хозяйки. Рыканіе львовъ; пѣніе соловья; мычаніе быка, вола и коровы; ржаніе лошадей; лай собакъ; воркованье голубя; карканье вороновъ; кваканье лягушекъ; вой волка; жужжаніе пчелъ, жуковъ и мухъ; блеяніе барановъ и овецъ. Каминъ безъ огня; окна безъ стѣколъ; каша безъ масла; сѣдла безъ стремени; зарядъ безъ пули; острова и луга безъ деревьевъ; повара, кучера и работники безъ работы; дѣти безъ матери; солдаты безъ ружей; ружья безъ кремней: статуя безъ рукъ и безъ ушей; медвѣжата и львенки безъ шерсти; корабли безъ коекъ; суда безъ веселъ; чай безъ сахара и безъ сливокъ. Пукъ перьевъ; дюжина чашекъ, тарелокъ и стакановъ; сотня форелей; десятокъ дынь; множество гусей, утокъ и лебедей; стада скота; табуны лошадей. Мужья древности, и мужья женъ. Цвѣты садовъ, и цвѣта радуги. Листы бумаги, и листья деревъ. Зубы во рту, и зубья у гребня. Колѣна Израильтянъ, колѣни у человѣка, и колѣнья растенія. Ловъ сельдей у береговъ Америки былъ очень выгоденъ для Англичанъ, Шведовъ, Голландцевъ и Французовъ.

Советъ друзьямъ. Слава Богу. Горю врагамъ. Приказъ войску. Повиновеніе законамъ. Дай вѣсть гусямъ, курамъ, голубямъ и щенкамъ. Поступать соответственно правиламъ

чести. Жить прилично состоянію. Законъ, данный какъ дворянамъ, такъ и мѣщанамъ. Противиться желаніямъ дѣтей, и волею родителей. Книжки перья тетради принадлежатъ ученикамъ, а не учителямъ. Поля и луга принадлежатъ отцу и матери, а сады, какъ и лѣса, сыновьямъ и дочерямъ. Нравится мужчѣнамъ, и не нравится жѣнщинамъ. Зелень нравится глазамъ. Картины нравятся сестрамъ, а цвѣты братьямъ. Полезный отечеству; пріятный Богу и людямъ; вѣрный Государю; любезный друзьямъ; милый дѣтямъ. Человѣкъ познается по лицу, по голосу, по росту, по походкѣ и по тѣлодвиженіямъ. Туристы путешествуютъ по Швейцаріи, Франціи, Италіи, Германіи, Америкѣ и Египту.

Братья купили дома, сады, деревню и поля, а продали быковъ, коровъ, лошадей и карету. Читаетъ басню, рисовать картину, писать письма, играть пѣсню, чинить перья. Посыщать братьевъ и сестеръ, матерей и дочерей, отцовъ и сыновей. Купить шляпу и шапку, перчатки и башмаки, чулки и подвязки. Завоеватель побѣдилъ войска, и покори́лъ народъ. Пётръ разбилъ Шведовъ, завоевалъ Эстляндію и Лифляндію, основалъ городъ Санктпетербургъ, и просвѣтилъ Россію. Россіяне побѣждали Татаръ, Турокъ, Шведовъ, Французовъ и Персіянъ. Дожди освѣжаютъ землю, а холода истребляютъ саранчу.

Дѣти, будьте прилежны! Иванъ, прійди сюда! Воины, сражайтесь храбро! Боже, спаси Царя! Господи, помилуй меня!

Ученики пишутъ грифельмъ или перомъ и чернилами. Иванъ играетъ съ Алексѣемъ и съ Василіемъ, а Мэри играетъ съ Собою и съ Любовью. Пирогъ съ миндалемъ; горшокъ съ цвѣтами; кадка съ водою; человѣкъ съ умомъ и съ гениемъ; галерея съ картинами. Городъ съ кремлемъ и гаванью; деревья съ листьями, цвѣтами и плодами; киверъ съ султанами; комната съ дверями; хлѣбъ съ солью; вода съ виномъ; вино съ водою; профессора съ учениками; письмо съ деньгами. Рисовать карандашомъ, писать кистью и красками. Купецъ торгуетъ саломъ, мыломъ, молокомъ, мукою, крупною, виномъ, пивомъ, сукнами, полотнами и кружевами, а сосѣди купца торгуютъ волами, баранами и лошадьми. Дворцы съ башнями; церкви съ колокольнями; дома съ окнами; зданія съ галереями; полки съ знаменами. Горы изобилуютъ золотомъ, серебромъ, мѣдью, желѣзомъ, ртутью и свинцомъ.

Басни о быкѣ и баранѣ, объ ослѣ и соловьѣ; о кузнечикѣ и муравьѣ; о дубѣ и тростникѣ; о лисицѣ и воронѣ, о волкѣ и ягнѣнкѣ. Сказки объ ангелѣ-хранителѣ, объ Иванѣ и Марьѣ; повѣсти о Сѣргѣи пустынникѣ, о гербѣ и гѣниѣ. Говоритъ объ играхъ, объ урокахъ, о времени, о мѣстѣ, объ обстоятельствахъ. Въ сочиненіи говорятъ много о чести и безчестіи, о добродѣтели и пороцѣ, о храбрости и малодушіи. Въ водѣ живутъ рыбы, лягушки и слизни, а въ лѣсу живутъ лвы, медвѣди, лисицы и зайцы.

Книги ученика правятся учителю. Свѣтъ солнца озаряетъ зѣмлю лучами. Цвѣта розы пріятны глазамъ. Друзья челоуѣчества дѣлають добро людямъ. Въ саду цвѣтутъ розы съ шипами; ибо нѣтъ розы безъ шиповъ. Дѣти умываются водою реки. Стаканъ съ водою стоитъ на столѣ комнаты. Слезы радости блестятъ въ глазахъ матери. Слава злодѣевъ непродолжительна; но имена благодѣтелей сіяють въ вѣчности. Счастье на землѣ состоитъ въ спокойствіи духа и въ чистотѣ совѣсти. Юноши любятъ пѣніе соловья, на берегу ручья, при свѣтѣ луны. Говорить правду есть долгъ дѣтей. Любить Бога сердцемъ и душою. Муравьи и бобы могутъ служить примѣромъ челоуѣку. Поѣздка въ Москву и въ Кіевъ. Входъ въ библіотеку для чтенія. Подай учителю тетрадь со стихами на случай праздника. Надоно вставать утромъ, работать днемъ, отдыхать вечеромъ и спать ночью. Громъ пушекъ и звонъ колоколовъ возвестили гражданамъ о прибытіи побѣдителя враговъ отечества.

Exercises on  
the adjectives. p. 83.

Пустой карманъ; карманъ пустъ. Крепкій замокъ; замокъ крепокъ. Вѣрный слуга; слуга былъ вѣренъ. Мягкій воскъ; воскъ мягокъ. Спокойный сонъ; сонъ спокоенъ. Достойный сынъ; сынъ достоинъ. Истинный другъ; другъ истиненъ. Совершенный покой; покой будетъ совершенъ. Прозрачное стекло; стекло прозрачно. Древнее преданіе; преданіе было древне. Теплое лѣто; лѣто будетъ тепло. Тупое перо; перо тупо. Вѣтхая хижина; хижина ветха. Синяя бумага; бумага синя. Новые дома; дома новы. Богатыя семьи; семьи были богаты. Красныя знамена; знамена будутъ красны.

Бѣлая бумага; бѣлѣйшая бумага; самая бѣлая бумага. Нева быстра, а Волга быстрее. Молоко жидко, а вода жиже. Глубокій ручей; глубочайшая река. Дома высоки, а башни



выше. Хорошій чай; лучший чай; самый лучший чай. Собаки малы; кошки меньше; но мыши малѣйшія. Отецъ молодъ: мать моложе; но сестра самая молодая. Сѣно дорога, а солома дороже. Молоко сладко; сахаръ слаще; но медъ самый сладкій.

Блѣватая бумага; бурѣватія чернила; черноватая вода; краска синеѣта. Буренная корѣвка; маленная лошадка; пѣгенная лошадка; бѣдненная дѣвочка; старичѣкъ старѣнекъ; старушка добренна. Пребѣлая бумага; бумага блѣхонька; пресухія дрова; дрова сухоньки.

Хозяинъ обширныхъ садовъ, и хозяинъ новаго дома. Стаканъ хорошей воды и краснаго вина; пѣлые горшки свиного сала и еловой смолы. Дѣлай добро бѣднымъ дѣтямъ и дряхлымъ старикамъ, и не ходи по чужимъ полямъ. Вотъ домъ Князя Долгорукаго; вотъ дворецъ Графини Толстой, а вотъ обширные сады молодыхъ Графовъ Завадовскихъ. Я дивился пріятному пѣнію прошлагоднаго соловья. Чинить лебединое перѳ тупымъ ножикомъ. Вотъ гусиныя перья, красныя карандаши, толстыя тетради, дубовыя линейки и большіе циркули, а вотъ сукѣнные кафтаны, тафтаныя платки, шелковые чулки, пуховыя шляпы, тонкія полѣтна и тончайшія кружева. Люби непорѣчные нравы; читай полезныя книги; читай старыхъ людей; хвали добрыхъ дѣла; береги чѣстнаго и вѣрнаго слугу. Подари новую книгу самому прилежному ученику. Ты хвалишь весеннюю погоду, ясность лѣтнихъ ночей, осеннюю прохладу и зимніе холода. Я уважаю славныхъ мужей и знаменитыхъ полководцевъ древнихъ временъ. Большіе манѣвры нынѣшняго года будутъ въ Красномъ Селѣ и на Дудергофской Горѣ.

Онъ вышелъ изъ отцова дома, и дѣлаетъ добро сестринной дочери. Онъ продалъ жѣнню имѣніе братнину сыну. Поклоняться Господни храмы и Божіи церкви. Повиноваться Господней волѣ, и познавать величество Божіа имени. Первая Русская Грамматика была написана безсмертнымъ Ломоносовымъ, и Россійская Исторія Николаемъ Михайловичемъ Карамзиннымъ. Сраженія съ Французами происходили подъ Бородинымъ и подъ Борисовымъ. Я живаю въ Новѣгородѣ и въ Бѣльѣзерѣ. Деревни Княгини Салтыковой лежатъ подъ городомъ Кашиннымъ.

Вотъ лисья шуба, соболья шапка, птичье гнѣздѣ, заячьи мѣха и слоновьи зубы. Пудъ оленьяго мяса, аршинъ воловьей кожи, и фунтъ телячьихъ мозговъ. Не ходи по волчьимъ следамъ, и не входи въ медвѣжью берлогу. Разсужденіе о человѣчьемъ глазѣ и о рыбьей головѣ. Онъ торгуетъ рыбыми клѣмъ, бычачьимъ саломъ, козыими шкурами и пѣтушьими грѣбнями.

Хвастѣе похожъ на сою, украшенную павлиньими перьями. Сосѣдовъ братъ пріѣхалъ изъ дальняго города, а сестра изъ дальней деревни. Иваново платье узко, но Петрово еще уже. Добренькая старушка живѣтъ въ сырѣмъ домѣ, лежащемъ подъ Царицынымъ селомъ. Я купилъ медвѣжью шубу съ бобрѣвымъ воротникомъ, и бобрѣвую шапку съ шелковою лентою. Вотъ прекрасная книга въ богатомъ софьянномъ переплетѣ. Гдѣ найдемъ мы примѣръ чистѣйшаго самоотверженія, высшей любви къ отечеству?

Exercises  
on the  
numerals.  
P. 97.

У человѣка одинъ языкъ, одинъ носъ, два глаза, два уха, две щеки, две руки, две ноги, десять пальцевъ на рукѣ и десять пальцевъ на ногѣ, тридцать два зуба, и семь позвонковъ. Въ высокосномъ году четыре времени, двѣнадцать мѣсяцевъ, пятьдесятъ две недѣли и два дня, или триста шестьдесятъ шесть дней, или восемь тысячъ семьсотъ восемьдесятъ четыре часа, или пятьсотъ двадцать семь тысячъ и сорокъ минутъ. Въ книгѣ сто листовъ безъ одного. Оба брата и обѣ сестры. Полтора часа, и полторы минуты. Два рубля съ половиною и три копейки съ половиною. Въ берковцѣ десять пудовъ; въ пудѣ сорокъ фунтовъ; въ фунтѣ тридцать два лѣта; въ лѣтѣ три золотника; въ фунтѣ девяносто шесть золотниковъ.

Две пуховыя шляпы, три шелковые платка, четыре перочинныя ножика, пять фарфоровыхъ чашекъ и шесть прекрасныхъ картинъ. Сіи два черныя ворона, те три бѣлыя пера, мой четыре новыя книги; эти пять рѣзвыхъ дѣтей. Оба бѣдные сироты и обѣ несчастныя сироты. Двое слугъ, трое мастеровыхъ, четверо дѣтей, шестеро солдатъ, двои часы, трои очки, пятеры ножницы. Первые полтора часа. Первые сорокъ дней; вторые сто ефимковъ, и послѣдняя тысяча гульденовъ.

Я купилъ одного быка и одну лошадь, одинъ столъ и одно зеркало. Двадцать одинъ рубль, пятьдесятъ одна копейка. Тысяча и одна ночь. Молодой человекъ тридцати одного года безъ двадцати одного дня. Не суди о человекѣ по одному проступку и по одной ошибкѣ. Офицеръ съ двадцатью однимъ солдатомъ. Пётръ Первый и Екатерина Вторая царствовали въ осьмнадцатомъ вѣкѣ. Шведы уважаютъ Карла Двенадцатаго, а Французъ поставили памятникъ Генриху Четвёртому. Статья была писана пятнадцатаго числа Января мѣсяца тысяча восемьсотъ двадцать третьяго года, и происшествіе относится къ шестому вѣку, а именно къ пятьсотъ семьдесятъ третьему году.

Шкапъ съ дюжиною фарфоровыхъ тарелокъ, или съ двѣнадцатью фарфоровыми тарелками. Дрожки, запряжённые парой воронихъ лошадей, или двумя вороними лошадьми; и карѣта, запряжённая шестью рыжими лошадьми, или шестью коими рыжихъ лошадей. Городъ лежить отсюда въ тысячѣ верстъ, село во ста верстахъ, а деревня въ сорокѣ верстахъ. Въ Москвѣ было тысяча шестьсотъ церквей, или сорокъ сороковъ церквей. Я довольствуюсь осьмидесятью рублями (или двумя сороками рублей) въ мѣсяцъ, то есть девятьюстами шестидесятью рублями въ годъ. Онъ не доживётъ до сорока лѣтъ; и она умерла сорока трёхъ лѣтъ. Она довольна сорока копейками, и она удивилась ста картинами. Онъ не можетъ прожить мѣнѣе ста тысячъ рублей въ годъ. Городъ съ двумя башнями; комодъ съ шестью ящиками; домъ съ сорока окнами; крѣпость со ста пушками; церковь о пяти главахъ; домъ о трёхъ ярусахъ; деревня съ четырьмя ветряными мельницами. Я люблю равно обоихъ сыновей и обеихъ дочерей. Онъ имѣетъ четверо дѣтей, а она оставила пятеро сиротъ. Мой братъ не могъ слѣдить съ этими двумя упрямыми лошадьми. Онъ жилъ долго съ своими пятью двоюродными братьями. Къ этому миллиону старыхъ Прусскихъ ефимковъ надобно прибавить тысячу тѣхъ новыхъ рублей.

Каждому по сту рублей и по сороку копѣекъ. Въ некоторыхъ мѣсяцахъ по тридцати дней, а въ другихъ по тридцати одному дню. Въ каждомъ сараѣ было по двѣ карѣты, а въ каждой карѣтѣ по три мужчины и по четыре женщины. Каждому по сту по девяносту рублей и по сороку по пяти копѣекъ.

У насъ по двадцати по семі очковъ. Каждая часть сочиненія продаётся по полутору рубля серебромъ.

По утру не должно судить о полудни. Въ первые полдня онъ не зналъ что дѣлать. Въ четыре часа по полуночи, или въ пять часовъ по полудни. Это случилось въ послѣдніе полгода тысяча восемьсотъ сорокъ четвёртаго года. Первые полчаса прошли спокойно. Въ продолженіе первыхъ полчаса. За мною было полтора ста тысячъ рублей годоваго дохода.

Exercises  
on the  
pronouns.  
p. 107.

Я люблю тебя, а ты меня обижаешь. Мы уважаемъ его, а еѣ мы любимъ душевно. У меня много денегъ, а у тебя нѣтъ ни копѣйки. Заступись за него, и понадейся на ней. Посиди со мною, и приходи съ нимъ. Скажи ей, чтобъ она пришла ко мнѣ. Безъ него, безъ ней и безъ васъ жизнь мнѣ скучна. Я не вижу ихъ, а я сдѣлаю всё для нихъ. Мы уважаемъ васъ, а вы забыли насъ. Будь во мнѣ увѣренъ: я поговорю о тебѣ. Мнѣ пріятно быть съ нею. Я не доверяю себѣ, а ты доволенъ собою. Мы бережемъ себя, а они себѣ вредятъ.

Мой братъ, твой сестра и его сынъ вмѣстѣ учились. Я стараюсь угодить вашему учителю и нашему смотрителю. Мой домъ красивѣе твоего, а твой собака меньше моей. Я живу безъ нихъ, и могу обойтись безъ ихъ помощи. Не хвались своими трудами, а подумай о своихъ лѣтахъ. Подойди къ моему столу, и подарь денегъ своей сестрѣ. Мы говоримъ о своихъ дѣлахъ, а вы занимаетесь своимъ урокомъ. Ученіе горько, но плоды его сладки. Твои сады прекрасны; я удивляюсь ихъ красотамъ.

Видишь ли эту собаку и этого котѣ, этихъ людей и тѣхъ деревьевъ? Въ этихъ земляхъ нѣтъ золота, и въ тѣхъ нѣтъ серебра. Я слышалъ это отъ вашего брата, но я этому не вѣрю. Я хвалю ваше намѣреніе; давно я предвидѣлъ оно. Давно ли ты живешь въ семь городъ? Я удивляюсь этому саду, а тотъ лучше. Эти перья тупы; сіи дома каменные; тѣ улицы узки. Такіе глаза пронзительны; такія дѣла не приносятъ чести. Таковы люди.

Человѣкъ, котораго вы видите, очень умѣнь. Книга, которую вы читаете, очень пріятна. Я знаю дѣло, о которомъ вы говорите. Вода, которою я моюсь, очень холодна. Берегись того, кто льститъ тебѣ. Тотъ, у кого много дѣла, не думаетъ о заботахъ. Учитесь тому, чего вы не знаете.

Вот такое сукно, какое я купилъ. Какое былъ военачальникъ, таковы и воины. Вот другъ, въ чьихъ рукахъ моя судьба. Слушайся того, въ чьемъ домѣ ты жилъ. Вот книга, какихъ мало, и случай, каковыя рѣдки.

Который часъ, и въ которомъ часу придешь? Какими книгами занимаешься, и какіе люди здѣсь живутъ? Подъ которымъ начальникомъ ты служишь, и какому языку ты учишься? Чьи эти дома? Съ чего позволенія ты вышелъ со двора? Я не видалъ, чью шляпу бросили на полъ. Я не знаю, съ чьими детьми онъ гуляетъ. О чемъ ты заботишься, и чемъ я заслужилъ твою дружбу? Съ чемъ можно поздравить тебя, и отъ чего ты получилъ эти деньги? Сколько верстъ отъ этого города до того? Изъ сколькихъ томовъ состоитъ сіе сочиненіе? По сколько рублей достанется вамъ изъ этой прибыли?

Ты самъ согласишься со мною: самый звукъ его голоса пріятенъ. Я нанимаю сію квартиру у самого хозяина. Самые пороки находятъ у васъ извиненіе. Онъ всегда говоритъ о себѣ самомъ. Вы недовольны собою самими. Мы видѣли ея самоё. Самая смерть не страшна. Мы всѣ довольствуемся однимъ жалованіемъ. Такъ думаютъ одніе женщины. Мы оба хотимъ служить единому Богу. Въ каждомъ собраніи были граждане обоего пола. Они разсѣяны по всему свѣту. Надобно привыкать ко всякой нищѣ.

Нѣтъ никого здѣсь; не проси помощи ни у кого. Ты не вишь ничего, и это не годится ни къ чему. Учись чему нибудь, и скажи это кому нибудь. Я не продамъ своего дома ни за что, и вы продали свой за ничто. Изъ ничего не сдѣлаешь ничего. Въ теченіе нѣсколькихъ мѣсяцевъ онъ ежедневно покупалъ по нѣскольку сотъ душъ.

Обѣ сестры дурно говорятъ другъ о другѣ. Англичане и Французы ненавидятъ другъ друга. Мы ходимъ гулять другъ съ другомъ. Сии дома лежатъ одинъ за другимъ. Доски набросаны одна съ другою.

Я дѣлаю добро, сколько я желаю. Ты желаешь учиться. Онъ думаетъ, что знаетъ всѣ науки, и хвастаетъ своими успѣхами. Мы не дерзаемъ вѣрить вашимъ словамъ, хотя вы говорите правду. Мои сосѣди питаются однимъ хлѣбомъ, и уповаютъ на Провидѣніе. Вы торгуете сукномъ, и вы требуете

Exercises on  
the verbs.  
p. 166.

многого. Голубь воркуетъ; горлица стонетъ; собака лаетъ; щенки брешутъ; лягушки квакаютъ; вороны каркаютъ; лвы рыкаютъ; олень токуетъ; куры кудахчутъ; кошка мяучитъ; быки мычатъ; пчелы жужжатъ; змея шипитъ; орлы трубятъ; соловей щебечутъ; овцы блеютъ; свиный хрюкаютъ; лисица визжитъ; осёл ревётъ; какъунъ клохчетъ; перепёлка вавакаетъ; птѣухъ кукурекаетъ; сорбка скрекочетъ; попугай болтаётъ. Громъ гремитъ; вода кипитъ; двѣри скрипятъ; ручьи жужжатъ; огонь трещитъ; звѣзды сверкаютъ; солнце светитъ; пчѣлы роются; алмазы блещутъ; сухіе листья хрущатъ; вѣтеръ свистаетъ; снегъ таетъ. Солнце озаряетъ землю своими лучами, грѣетъ и живитъ её. Земля обращается вкругъ солнца. Вы напрасно горюете.

Я гулялъ вчера по берегу рѣки, когда солнце садилось. Мой сестра сидѣла подѣ деревомъ, которое качалось вѣтромъ. Вчера мы много работали, читали, писали и рисовали. Овцы мрутъ отъ стужи. Его мать давно умерла. Непріятель заперли его въ крѣпости. Этотъ человекъ ослѣпъ, и его жена оглохла. Мои деревья высохли и мои цвѣты завяли.

Москва долго будетъ красоваться во главѣ городовъ Русскихъ. Ты будешь играть, и я буду писать. Россійское государство будетъ непрерывно возвышаться, и всегда приобретѣть болѣе силы и славы. Великій государь никогда не умрѣтъ.

Дѣлай, что тебѣ говорятъ, и не думай упрямиться. Не теряй надежды, и уповай на Бога. Ступайте домой, и не токуйте столько. Не трать времени, и не мучь животныхъ. Говорите всегда правду, и не спорьте о пустякахъ.

Соловей поётъ; лошадь ржётъ; волкъ воетъ. Есть звѣри, которые спятъ всю зиму. Ты берѣшь много на себя, и я не берусь за это дѣло. Зачѣмъ вы имѣете эту книгу? Онъ живётъ въ Москвѣ, и слышетъ богатымъ человекомъ. Пастухъ стрижѣтъ овецъ; крестьяне радуютъ лѣнъ и ткутъ холсты. Онъ хочетъ спать, и вы хотите играть. Мой сосѣд берѣгъ меня, какъ роднаго сына, и не могъ со мною разстаться. Непріятель сожгши многіе города; они увлеклись злобою и мщеніемъ. Пастухъ пасъ овецъ на лугу. Я пошлю за лекаремъ, и ты получишь мнѣ денегъ. Этотъ городъ цвѣтѣтъ, и онъ долго будетъ цвѣсти силою и богатствомъ. Я дамъ

тебѣ книгу, а что ты дашь мнѣ? Ты не можешь говорить: что онъ дастъ мнѣ за это? Не бери на себя того, чего ты не можешь исполнить. Дѣти, живите мирно, не клянитесь, никогда не лгите, и ведите себя хорошенъко.

Звѣри ходятъ и бѣгаютъ, птицы летаютъ, рыбы плаваютъ, и черви ползаютъ. Посмотри, сюда идѣтъ солдатъ; за нимъ бѣжитъ собака. Видишь, какъ быстро летитъ эта ласточка; онѣ всегда такъ летаютъ. Сей морякъ долго плавалъ по Черному Мѣрю. Что тамъ плаваетъ на водѣ? Жены Славянъ носили воду и таскали дрова. Что ты несешь въ этомъ мышкѣ? Смотри, какую вязанку дровъ этотъ человекъ тащитъ. Видѣли тогда, чего не видѣли до того.

Непріятель ринулся въ городъ и кинулся на корысть. Молнія засверкала. Молнія сверкнула, грянулъ сильный громъ, земля дрогнула, церковь затряслась. Братъ мой легъ и захрапѣлъ; онъ громко храпнулъ и проснулся. Могъ ли надѣяться, что міра моя тронетъ еще ваше хладное сердце? Солнце заблестало, но не надолго: блеснуло и скрылось. Мы выбросали за окно весь соръ; въ соръ мы выбросили и важную бумагу.

Прошлаго года я хаживалъ въ городъ. Сократъ говаривалъ. Нѣмцы издавна живали въ Новогородѣ. Живучи въ Москвѣ, я ѣзжалъ въ Троицкую Лавру. Въ молодія лѣта я живалъ въ деревнѣ.

Если бы камни говорить могли, онѣ научили бы тебя осторожности. Если бы кто нибудь вошелъ къ намъ въ эту минуту, онъ увидѣлъ бы насъ въ отчаяніи, и услышалъ бы наши стenanія и наши вздохи. Есть мало предметовъ въ свѣтъ, на которые я не обращалъ бы вниманія. Не было такого каменнаго сердца, которое не изливалося бы въ слезахъ.

Солдатъ этотъ служилъ долго, и выслужилъ пенсію. Не всякій выслужитъ еѣ съ такимъ отличіемъ. Онъ бывалъ во многихъ сраженіяхъ, и вездѣ отличался блистательною храбростію. Особенно отличился онъ при взятіи одной непріятельской баттарей. Онъ первый взобрался на брѣстеръ, убилъ непріятельскаго солдата и взялъ пушку. За это его наградили орденомъ. Потомъ награждали его и другими отличіями. Теперь отправится онъ въ родину, поселится въ своей семьѣ, и будетъ рассказывать о своихъ походахъ, какъ хаживалъ на Турокъ и Французовъ, какъ бивалъ враговъ.



какъ терпѣть голодь, страдать отъ ранъ, и утѣшлся мыслію, что служить своему Государю сердцемъ и душою. Уповаи на меня.

Exercises  
on the  
participles.  
p. 176.

Человѣкъ, любящій правду, ненавидитъ ложь. Купающееся дитя; собака, бросаящаяся на прохожихъ. Купецъ, получающій товары изъ Лондона, продавалъ ихъ выгодно. Купецъ, получившій товары изъ Лондона, продалъ ихъ выгодно. Страждущій болѣзнію, ищетъ облегченія. Зажгшій потухшую свѣчу, и вытри замёрзшее стекло. Слава герою, спасшему своё отечество. Рыкающій левъ, мычашій быкъ, лающая собака, поющій пѣтухъ, воркующій голубь, выражаютъ свои чувства и желанія.

Море, волнѣемое вѣтрами, устрашаетъ пловцовъ. Дочь, любимая отцемъ, старается заслуживать его любовь. Должно помогать несчастному, гонимому судьбою и преслѣдуемому неудачами. Это снятое молоко, и вотъ третій табакъ. Это заряженное ружьё. На рынкѣ продаются битые гуси, сложенные верёвки, откормленные поросята и стрижённые овцы.

Россія обитаема многими народами. Добрые государи любимы своими подданными, и уважаемы соседями. Татары были побѣждены и разбиты на Куликовомъ полѣ. Труды твой будутъ увѣнчаны успѣхомъ. Имена бывають склоняемы, а глаголы спрягаемы. Сей великій полководецъ будетъ чтимъ въ потомствѣ. Москва была разорена и сожжена врагами. Это ружьё заряжено. Эта книга прекрасно переплетена.

Exercises on  
adverbs and  
gerunds.  
p. 181.

Поди сюда, ибо я здѣсь живу. Гдѣ вашъ братъ? Его нѣтъ дома. Куда онъ поѣхалъ вчера вечеромъ? Ты судишь умно, а братъ твой судитъ умнѣе. Я хожу шибко, а ты ходишь шибче. Вы говорите по-русски чисто, а сестрица ваша ещё чище. Завтра поѣдемъ мы далѣко, а чрезъ годъ ещё далѣе. Ты поѣшь хорошо, но она поѣтъ лучше. Я прошу васъ убѣдительноше. Я благодарю васъ покорнѣе.

Гуляя на берегу рѣки, я наслаждаюсь прохладою вѣтера. Жалѣя о несчастныхъ, старайтесь помогать имъ. Я васъ учу, желая вамъ добра, и надѣясь, что вы успѣете въ наукахъ. Не умѣя сдѣлать чего нибудь, проси совета, не краснѣя. Дѣлай добро, не боясь никого. Не должно ѣсть лежа. Служа отечеству и умирая за него, мы исполняемъ свой долгъ.



Получивъ письмо ваше, и узнавъ, чего вы желаете, я немедленно отвѣчалъ. Отобѣдавши, останься дома. Написавши письмо, положивши въ кувертъ и запечатавши, отдай его на почту. Пришедши домой, я сѣлъ писать. Женившись, онъ поѣхалъ въ деревню. Просидѣвши часъ у него, я пошелъ домой; раздѣвшись и легши, я скоро уснулъ.

Безъ надежды нельзя жить въ свѣтъ. Отъ рѣки до лѣсу Exercises on the prepositions. p. 185. двѣ версты. О чѣмъ вы говорите? Мы трудимся для общаго блага. Между домомъ и садомъ пространный дворъ съ конюшнями. Бога ради не унывай. Любѣ къ государю и отечеству. Онъ живѣтъ у своего дяди. Солдатъ выскочилъ изъ-за куста. Лучъ солнечный проникаетъ сквозь воду. Этотъ человѣкъ при смерти. Птица летаетъ подъ облаками. Я положилъ книгу подъ столъ. Садитесь за столъ, и сидите за столомъ. Братъ мой ѣдетъ въ Москву, потому что его жена живѣтъ въ Москвѣ. Орелъ сидитъ на деревѣ. Эта рѣмка разбилась на мелкія части. Я досадуюсь на брата моего за его лѣность. Не заботься о чужихъ дѣлахъ. Мой другъ ушибся объ уголъ стола. Вода течетъ съ кровли. Вотъ деревья съ листьями, но безъ цвѣтовъ. Эта собака будетъ съ корову. Дѣти бѣгаютъ по двору и по саду. Мы работали отъ перваго по пятое число Августа. Онъ носитъ трауръ по своему брату.

Мой дядя родился и жилъ въ Москвѣ, а не въ Твери. Знаешь Exercises on the conjunctions. p. 188. ли что нашъ учитель нездоровъ? Если вы не придѣте, то я осержусь. Спроси у него, хочетъ ли онъ ѣхать, или намѣревается остаться дома. Онъ заботится болѣе о братѣ нежели о сестрѣ. Прийтие дѣлать добро другимъ, чѣмъ самому получать благопріятія. Пусть онъ придѣтъ; пускай они уѣдутъ. Да солнце васъ не застанетъ на ложѣ. Да здравствуетъ Царь. Чѣмъ прилежнѣе ты будешь учиться, тѣмъ легче будетъ для тебя ученіе.

Зима пріятна. Люди суть смертны. Новгородъ былъ Exercises on the concord of words. p. 192. богаты. Россія есть обширная имперія. Волга есть царіца рѣкъ Русскихъ. Пріятель мой, вы будете довольны: у насъ есть большіе запасы. У меня завтра будутъ деньги. Ея Величество (Императрица) выѣхала. Его Превосходительство (Генералъ) уѣхалъ. Его Императорское Высочество (Великій Князь) былъ доволенъ. Географія и Исторія суть

весьма полезныя знанія. Молчать трудно. Сколько было тамъ дѣтей? Москва знаменита; городъ Москва знаменитъ. Китай многолюденъ; государство Китай многолюдно. У него есть тридцать одна лошадь. Книга, которую вы читаете, очень забавна. Вотъ человекъ, чьиими трудами пользуемся.

Exercises on  
dependence  
of words.  
p. 200.

Вода есть стихія. Александръ Македонскій былъ великій полководецъ. Татары были свирѣпы. Мой дядь офицеръ; мой дядь былъ тогда офицеромъ. Говорятъ, что кометы были или еще будутъ планетами.

Дождь осыпаетъ землю. Злодѣи ненавидятъ честныхъ людей. Бѣра, опустошившая наши поля, разорила многихъ поселянъ. Говорятъ всегда правду. Мой братъ былъ боленъ всю зиму. Я ѣхалъ цѣлую версту верхомъ. Тебя хвалятъ за прилежаніе. Онъ ударился объ стѣну. Мы сидимъ въ водѣ по шею. Сынъ ростомъ съ отца, и дочь почти съ мать.

Скупецъ предпочитаетъ деньги славѣ, а воинъ славу деньгамъ. Молнія предшествуетъ грому. Дивлюсь вашему терпѣнію. Нравятся ли вамъ эти картины. Не мсти твоemu непріятелю, и дѣлай добро обидѣвшему тебя. Быть чуду. Литья горючимъ слезамъ. Ребенку хочется пить. Сильному человеку не прилично обижать слабого. Подражаніе Іисусу Христу. Любѣ къ добродѣтели и ненависть къ пороку.

Вижу глазами, осязаю руками, слышу ушами, обоняю носомъ, вкушаю языкомъ. Изманилъ былъ взять Суворовымъ, и Очаковъ Потемкинымъ. Этихъ офицеровъ все называютъ героями. Большой едва шевелитъ губы (или губами). Гнушаюсь обманомъ и ложью. Здѣсь дышать чистымъ воздухомъ. Пожертвованіе жизнью за Государя и отечество. Онъ добръ сердцемъ, но слабъ головою. Утромъ надобно вставать, днемъ работать, вечеромъ отдыхать, и ночью спать. Помири моего друга съ его дядею. Имѣю честь поздравить васъ съ вашими успѣхами.

Сынъ моего искренняго друга вчера уѣхалъ. Дѣти большаго ума перѣдко бывають хилы. Составленъ списокъ офицерамъ нашей дивизіи. Печеніе хлѣба. Я купилъ фунтъ чаю и сажень дровъ. Столько трудовъ и заботъ пропало попустому. Русскіе взяли Парижъ осьмнадцатаго Марта тысяча восемьсотъ четырнадцатаго года. Я не емъ хлѣба, но пью воду. Я емъ хлѣбъ, но не пью воды. Я не получаю ни

письма, ни посылки. Въ этомъ письмѣ нѣтъ ни одной ошибки. Достань мнѣ денегъ. Воины желаютъ битвы и ищутъ славы. Славолюбецъ жаждетъ почестей. Ты хочешь богатства, и боишься труда. Бочка полна вина. Добрый человекъ чуждъ злобы и зависти. Золото дороже серебра; свинецъ тяжелѣе желѣза. Онъ проситъ милостыни ради Христа. Отдыхъ пріятенъ послѣ работы. Вдоль этого берега тянется цѣль горъ. Волки бродятъ около деревни.

Мой братъ хранить присутствіе духа при всѣхъ непріятностяхъ въ жизни. Сей городъ построенъ на крутомъ берегу быстрой рѣки. Церковь о пяти главахъ. Онъ плачетъ по своему отцу.

### Волшебница.

Одна вдова имѣла двухъ дочерей: старшая была похожа на свою мать и лицѣмъ и нравомъ, то есть, она была такъ же дурна и такъ же зла, какъ ей мать. Никто не любилъ ихъ; всѣ отъ нихъ бѣжали. Меньшая же была прекрасна и добродушна. Всѣ её любили. Но злая мать и злая сестра её ненавидѣли; безпрестанно бранили; одна она должна была работать въ домъ, топить печь, мести горницы, стрѣпать въ кухнѣ. Бѣдняжка плакала съ утра до вечера, но не лѣнилась работать; была послушна, терпѣлива, и всѣ то было напрасно, ибо ничѣмъ не могла угодить на злую мать и на злую сестру свою.

Ежедневно эта бѣдная дѣвушка должна была, съ большимъ кувшиномъ, ходить за водою въ ближнюю рощу, въ которой находился чистый источникъ. Однажды пошла она, по обыкновенію, къ этому источнику. День былъ очень жарокъ. Наполнивъ кувшинъ водою, она возвращалась домой. Вдругъ видитъ передъ собою старушку. «Дитя мое!» — сказала ей старушка: — «дай мнѣ напиться. Я устала; мнѣ жарко.» — «Съ охотою, бабушка!» сказала дѣвушка: «вотъ! напейся!» И она подала старушкѣ кувшинъ.

Старушка отъ слабости сѣла на траву, а молодая красавица стала передъ нею на колѣни, и осторожно поддерживала кувшинъ, пока она пила воду. — «Благодарю тебя, милая!»

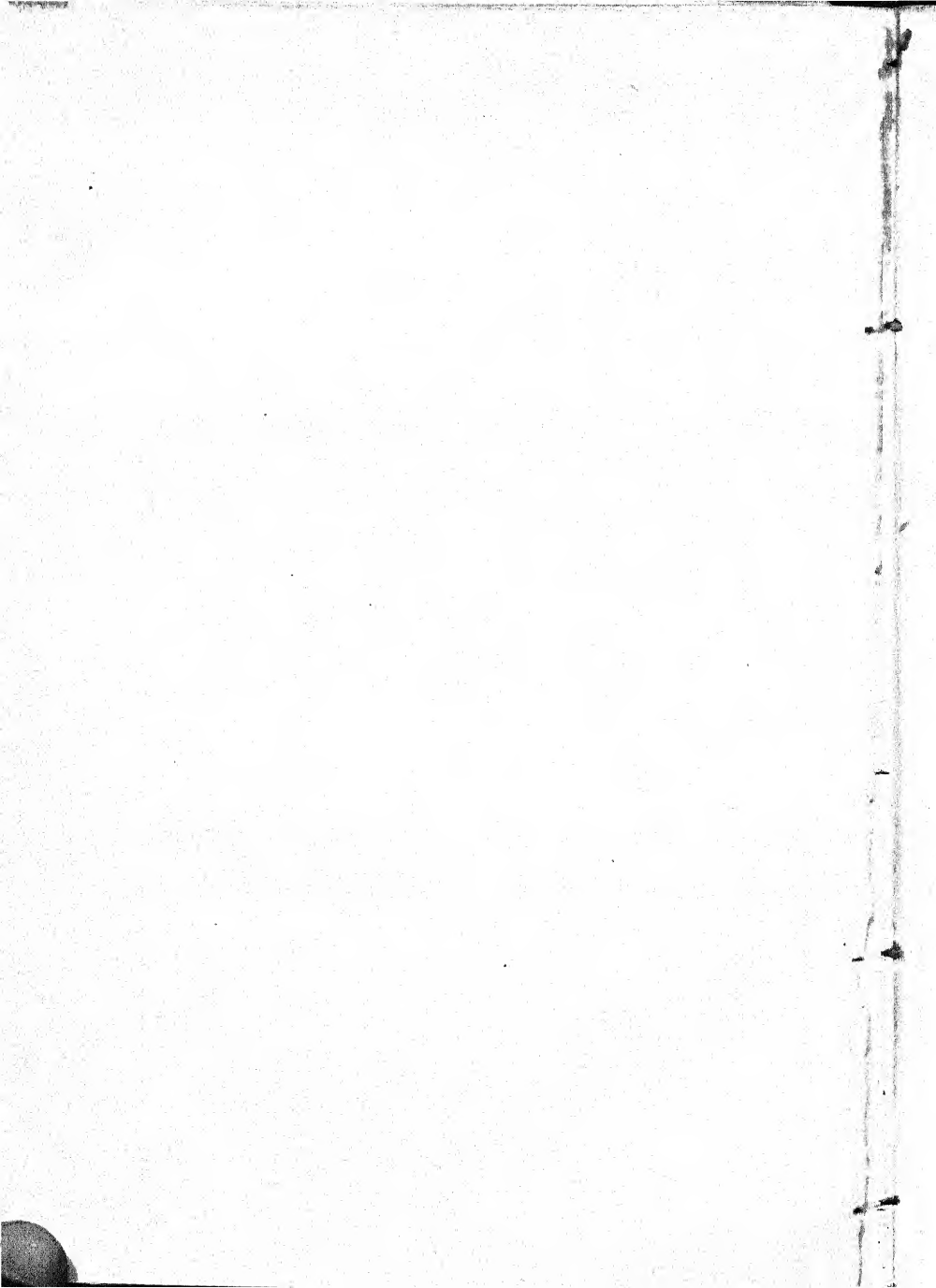
сказала старушка, напившись: «Вижу, что ты доброе, ласковое дитя, и хочу тебя наградить за твою услужливость. Знай же, я волшебница, и нарочно взяла на себя вид старушки, чтобы тебя испытать. Радуюсь, что ты такая добрая, и вот, что я хочу для тебя сделать: всякий раз, когда ты скажешь слово, изо рта у тебя выпадет или прекрасный цветок, или драгоценный камень, или большая жемчужина. Прости, дружок!» И волшебница исчезла.

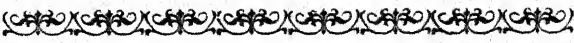
Прекрасная девушка возвратилась домой. «Где ты так долго была?» спросила у ней с сердцем мать. — «Что ты так долго делала в роще?» закричала злая сестра. — «Виновата, замыкалась!» отвечала бедняжка, и в ту самую минуту с прекрасных губ ее скатились два розы, две жемчужины и два большие изумруда. — «Что я вижу?» воскликнула удивленная мать. «Эти цветы! Это драгоценные камни! Что с тобою случилось!» — Красавица просто душно рассказала ей о своей встрече с волшебницею, а между тем цветы, алмазы и жемчуг так и сыпались с губ ей. — «Хорошо же!» проворчала мать: «завтра пошлю в рощу старшую мою дочь, и с нею то же будетъ.»

И на другое утро, она сказала своей дочери: «Нынче пойдешь за водою ты: возьми кувшинъ; но смотри же, если встретишь у источника старушку, дай ей напиться и приласкайся к ней хорошенько.» Злая девчонка нахмурилась, с досадою взяла кувшинъ; нехотя пошла в рощу, и во всю дорогу ворчала. Старушка сидела уже у источника. «Зачерпни мнѣ воды, мой милая!» сказала она девочке: «жарко, хочу напиться.» — «Какъ бы не такъ! Я не за темъ пришла сюда, чтобы услуживать старымъ бродягамъ. Напѣешься и безъ меня!» — «Какая же ты грубая!» сказала ей старушка: «Я накажу тебя. Съ этихъ поръ, при каждомъ словѣ твоёмъ, будетъ выпадать у тебя изо рта или змѣя или лягушка.» Она исчезла, а злая девчонка побѣжала домой, разбивши с досады кувшинъ свой. «Что скажешь, милая дочка!» спросила мать, увидѣвъ ее издавлекъ. — «Нечего сказать!» отвечала дочь, и вдругъ выскочили изо рта ей две змѣи и две жабы! — «Что я вижу! какой страхъ!» закричала мать. «Но во всемъ этомъ виновата твоя сестра! Я дамъ ей знать.» И онѣ бросились бить меньшую дочь.

Она, испугавшись угрозы, скрылась въ рощу, долго бѣжала, не смѣя оглянуться, забѣжала далеко, и наконецъ потеряла дорогу. Но это было къ ея счастію. Царскій сынъ, который тутъ забавлялся охотою, находился въ это время въ рощѣ; онъ увидѣлъ красавицу, которая, сидя на травѣ, горько плакала. — «Что съ тобою случилось? о чёмъ ты плачешь, милая?» спросилъ онъ, взявъ её ласково за руку. — «Боже мой! какъ мнѣ не плакать! Матушка выгнала меня изъ дому.» Она говорила, а цветы и драгоценные камни сыпались съ ея розовыхъ губъ, и слёзы обращались въ жемчужины. — «Что это значить?» спросилъ царскій сынъ: «отъ чего эти цветы, жемчуги и камни?» Бѣдняжка разсказала царскому сыну о томъ, что съ нею случилось. — Онъ полюбилъ её, и полюбилъ ещё болѣе за то, что она была такъ добра и мила, нежели за ея цветы и драгоценные камни. Онъ взялъ её съ собою, представилъ её Царю, отцу своему, которому она также понравилась, и Царь позволилъ сыну на ней жениться. Такимъ образомъ она сдѣлалась Царевною, а по смерти Царя, когда ея мужъ взошёлъ на отцовскій престолъ, Царицею, и была Царицею доброю. А злая сестра ея? что сдѣлалось съ нею? — Она жалостнымъ образомъ кончила свою жизнь. Мать, которую она безпрестанно сердила и огорчала, принуждена была её выгнать изъ дому; никто не хотѣлъ ей дать пристанища, и она скрылась въ лѣсъ, гдѣ скоро умерла съ досады и голода.







## TABLE OF CONTENTS

### FIRST PART

#### LEXICOLOGY.

	Page
Division of the Grammar . . . . .	1
Sounds or letters . . . . .	2
Alphabet . . . . .	2
Division of the letters . . . . .	6
Pronunciation of the letters . . . . .	7
Vowels . . . . .	7
Semi-vowels . . . . .	11
Consonants . . . . .	13
Syllables and words . . . . .	17
Tonic accent . . . . .	17
<i>Reading-Exercise</i> . . . . .	18
Elements of speech . . . . .	22
Division of words . . . . .	23
Roots of words . . . . .	24
Inflections of words . . . . .	26
Metaplasms of words . . . . .	26
Permutation of letters . . . . .	26
Epenthesis and prosthesis . . . . .	28
Apocope and Syncope . . . . .	29
THE SUBSTANTIVE . . . . .	29
Division of substantives . . . . .	29
Properties of nouns . . . . .	30

	Page
Genders . . . . .	30
Aspects . . . . .	34
Numbers . . . . .	36
Cases . . . . .	37
Declension of substantives . . . . .	39
Regular substantives . . . . .	39
Rules of the declensions . . . . .	40
General rules . . . . .	41
Special rules . . . . .	42
Paradigms of the declensions of substantives . . . . .	43
First declension . . . . .	43
Second declension . . . . .	48
Third declension . . . . .	50
Irregular nouns . . . . .	54
<i>Exercises in the declension of substantives</i> . . . . .	58
THE ADJECTIVE . . . . .	65
Division of the adjectives . . . . .	65
Qualifying adjectives . . . . .	65
Possessive adjectives . . . . .	65
Properties of adjectives . . . . .	67
Gender, number, case . . . . .	68
Apocope of the termination . . . . .	68
Degrees of signification . . . . .	69
Declension of adjectives . . . . .	75
Paradigms of the declensions of adjectives . . . . .	76
First declension . . . . .	78
Second declension . . . . .	80
Third declension . . . . .	83
<i>Exercises on the adjectives</i> . . . . .	83
THE NUMERALS . . . . .	88
Division of numerals . . . . .	88
Cardinal and ordinal numerals . . . . .	89
Declension of the numerals . . . . .	91
Paradigms of the declension of the numerals . . . . .	92
Special rules of the numerals . . . . .	95
<i>Exercises on the numerals</i> . . . . .	97
THE PRONOUN . . . . .	102
Division of the pronouns . . . . .	102



	Page
Paradigms of the declension of the pronouns . . .	104
Declension of the pronouns . . . . .	105
<i>Exercises on the pronouns</i> . . . . .	107
THE VERB . . . . .	112
Division of verbs . . . . .	112
Inflections of the verb . . . . .	113
Tenses . . . . .	113
Aspects . . . . .	113
Moods . . . . .	116
Persons, numbers and genders . . . . .	117
Forms derived from the verb . . . . .	118
Conjugation . . . . .	118
Regular verbs . . . . .	122
Formation of the inflections of the verb . . . . .	123
Paradigms of the conjugations of the regular verbs . . . . .	125
First conjugation . . . . .	128
Second conjugation . . . . .	130
Third conjugation . . . . .	136
Irregular verbs . . . . .	137
Conjugation of irregular verbs . . . . .	138
Delineation of verbs . . . . .	142
Simple verbs . . . . .	143
Prepositional verbs . . . . .	150
<i>Exercises on the verbs</i> . . . . .	166
THE PARTICIPLE . . . . .	173
Division of the participles . . . . .	173
Active and neuter participles . . . . .	173
Passive participles . . . . .	174
Declension of the participles . . . . .	175
Passive verbs . . . . .	176
<i>Exercises on the participles</i> . . . . .	176
THE ADVERB AND THE GERUND . . . . .	178
Division of the adverbs . . . . .	178
Formation of the adverbs . . . . .	179
Degrees of comparison . . . . .	180
Gerunds . . . . .	180
<i>Exercises on the adverbs and the gerunds</i> . . . . .	181
THE PREPOSITION . . . . .	183

	Page
Division of the prepositions . . . . .	183
Government of the prepositions . . . . .	185
<i>Exercises on the prepositions</i> . . . . .	185
THE CONJUNCTION . . . . .	187
<i>Exercises on the conjunctions</i> . . . . .	188
THE INTERJECTION . . . . .	188

## SECOND PART

### SYNTAX.

Division of syntax . . . . .	189
CONCORD OF WORDS . . . . .	189
<i>Exercises on the concord of words</i> . . . . .	192
DEPENDENCE OF WORDS . . . . .	193
Nominative . . . . .	194
Vocative . . . . .	195
Accusative . . . . .	195
Dative . . . . .	196
Instrumental . . . . .	197
Genitive . . . . .	198
Prepositional . . . . .	200
<i>Exercises on the dependence of words</i> . . . . .	200
CONSTRUCTION . . . . .	210

## THIRD PART

### ORTHOGRAPHY.

USE OF THE LETTERS . . . . .	212
Vowels . . . . .	212
Semi-vowels . . . . .	215
Consonants . . . . .	215
Doubling of consonants . . . . .	218
Capital letters . . . . .	219
DIVISION OF WORDS INTO SYLLABLES . . . . .	219
ORTHOGRAPHY OF ISOLATED WORDS . . . . .	220
Russian words . . . . .	220
Foreign words . . . . .	223
ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS . . . . .	226
MARKS OF PUNCTUATION . . . . .	227

## FOURTH PART

## PROSODY.

	Page
Division of prosody . . . . .	229
ORTHOEPY . . . . .	229
Prosodical or tonic accent . . . . .	229
Place of the accent . . . . .	230
VERSIFICATION . . . . .	231
Tonic versification . . . . .	231
Foot or metre . . . . .	231
Denomination of the verses . . . . .	232
Cæsura . . . . .	237
Termination of the verses . . . . .	238
Rhyme . . . . .	239
Stanza or strophe . . . . .	239
Poetic licenses . . . . .	240
SOLUTION OF THE EXERCISES . . . . .	241



Books must be returned within one month of date of issue. Per Regd. Post.

Books must be returned within one month of date of issue. Per Regd. Post.

[illegible]

REI

Call No. 491.7

R33E

Accession No. 9784.

Title English-Russian Grammar  
of Principles.

Author Reiff, Ch. Ph.

BORROWER'S  
NO.

DATE  
LOANED

BORROWER'S  
NO.

DATE  
LOANED

FOR CONSULTATION  
ONLY